

The Pastime of People.

THE JOURNAL OF THE

HARDING AND WRIGHT,
PRINTERS,
St. John's Square, London.

Cat.

THE
Pastime of People,
OR,
THE CHRONICLES OF DIVERS REALMS;
AND MOST ESPECIALLY OF
The Realm of England.

BRIEFLY COMPILED, AND IMPRINTED IN CHEAPSIDE,

BY JOHN RASTELL, [A.D. 1529.]

NOW FIRST REPRINTED, AND SYSTEMATICALLY ARRANGED,

WITH

FAC-SIMILE WOOD-CUTS

OF THE

PORTRAITS OF POPES, EMPERORS, &c.

AND

THE KINGS OF ENGLAND.

London :

PRINTED FOR F. C. AND J. RIVINGTON; T. PAYNE; WILKIE AND ROBINSON;
LONGMAN, HURST, REES, ORME, AND BROWN; CADELL AND DAVIES;
J. MAWMAN; AND J. JOHNSON AND CO.

1811.

WELLINGTON

WELLINGTON

WELLINGTON

WELLINGTON

WELLINGTON

WELLINGTON

WELLINGTON

WELLINGTON

WELLINGTON

WELLINGTON

WELLINGTON

WELLINGTON



ADVERTISEMENT.

THE Public are here presented with a faithful re-impression of the once popular Chronicles of England, 'briefly compiled' by John Rastell, the original printer of them. The title-page sufficiently explains the nature of the present re-impression; and there remains little to add, which the Reader, almost at the first glance, may not anticipate.

The present arrangement, it is presumed, will be found a considerable improvement upon the former plan; as the several histories, which here succeed each other in regular order, are, in Rastell's impression, so confusedly arranged, that the Reader finds himself at Rome, Paris, and London, in the same page, and mixing with foreigners and Englishmen, before he knows where he is, or can remember preceding events. With all the Editor's well-known attachment to ancient lore, he conceived that an adherence

to antiquity, in these particulars, would be both blind and productive of confusion; especially as not a word of Rastell has been lost by the present modification.

In addition to the inconvenience of a barbarous arrangement of materials, the Editor (and particularly the Printer) had to contend with a still more barbarous typographical execution. It is hardly possible to conceive a book more rudely printed than the original of the present volume. Nothing but the bold and striking wood-cuts of our KINGS OF ENGLAND, by exciting the curiosity of purchasers, could have caused the great scarcity of it.

Fac-simile impressions of these wood-cuts, executed by MR. JOHN NESBIT, are now brought before the Public; and no expense has been spared by the publishers to render this volume a desirable acquisition to the stock of ancient Chronicles. The Editor has carefully compared a great number of passages in Rastell with the Chronicles of*

* With the exception of the wood-cut to the TITLE-PAGE; a fac-simile impression of which will be given in one of the volumes of the new edition of *The Typographical Antiquities of Great Britain*.

See Vol. III, p. 91 - 6. ed. Dit-clin.

*Caxton, Machlinia, St. Albans, and Fabian**, and found them, in almost every particular, (what Rastell professed them to be,) ‘*briefly compiled*’ from these anterior publications. The ‘*Polychronicon*’ is constantly quoted by the compiler himself.

The late Mr. Herbert conceived the account of *Stonehenge and King Arthur* [see pp. 105—107.] to be ‘*curious*’; but the historical antiquary will immediately discover it to be nothing more than a repetition of the floating superstitions of the day; which owe their origin to the fruitful imagination of Geoffrey of Monmouth, and which Rastell himself seems to treat with silent contempt. The account of the murder of the young princes, Edward V. and his Brother, is, as Mr. West observed†, sufficiently ‘*strange*.’

Herbert remarks, from Oldys, that ‘*this is one of the scarcest histories we have in print*. Anthony Wood never saw it, but mentions it by a Latin title from Bale, or Pits; and Bishop Nicolson knew not where to find it.

* The recent edition of Fabian, edited by Mr. Henry Ellis, is here referred to, as being the most valuable and carefully-executed re-impression of our old Chronicles, from the *Various Readings* subjoined, and a copious and judiciously arranged Index.

† In a note inserted in his own copy of the original edition. This event is detailed at page 292.

Its title might conduce to its obscurity among solid readers, and the slenderness of the volume to the destruction of the copies.' There does not seem much truth in the conclusions drawn from these premises; for the title is sufficiently interesting to excite the attention of the most solid reader, and the volume is by no means of such slender dimensions as Oldys has described it to be. Hearne gives us an extract from a 'MS. of Sir Hans Sloane,' where it is said to be in large folio†.*

It only remains to add, that almost the whole of the present impression has been carefully printed from a copy in the possession of the Right Hon. Thomas Grenville; the defective parts having been supplied by transcriptions from a copy belonging to John Towneley, Esq. Earl Spencer is in possession of another copy, not quite perfect; and his Majesty's Library may boast of the perfect and well preserved copy which formerly belonged to the collections of Lord Oxford and Mr. West.‡

T. F. DIBDIN.

Kensington, June 30, 1811.

* *Typographical Antiquities*, vol. i. p. 337: but see *Bibl. Harl.* vol. v. n°. 1254.

† *Robert of Gloucester's Chronicle*, vol. i. p. xxxiii. The original book is tall and wide, but not quite an inch in thickness.

‡ There is a finer copy quite perfect in Hunterian Museum, Glasgow.

The Pastyme of People.

THE Cronycles of dyuers realmys, and most specyally
of the realme of Englund; breuely cōpylyd and
empryntyd in chepesyde, at the sygne of the meare-
mayd, next to pollys gate.

■ Cum priuilegio.

¶ Prologus.

IT is well affyrmyd by dyuers and many historyers, that, after the dystruccōn of Troye, Eneas, with his son Ascanius begottē of his wyfe Crusa doughter to Priam kyng of Troye, cā in to Italy & ther maryed Lauina doughter to king Latinus, and after the deth of Latinus was there king and reynid iii. yere. After whō succedyd his son Ascanius, which byldyd the citee of Alba in Italy, and reynyd ther xxviii. yere; and after Ascanius reynyd Siluius, which was borne in the wooddis, and for ŷ cause he was callyd Siluius; which Siluius was a comen name to all the kynges ŷ reynyd after in Alba. He was also by some writers callyd Postumus, because ŷ he was born after ŷ deth of his fader. Of this Siluius there be dyuers oppyniōs; for some say he was son to Ascanius, and some hold ŷ he was son to Eneas by his wife Lauina, and also some writers hold ŷ Lauina had by Eneas a son callyd Ascanius. But whether that Ascanius son to Eneas and Lauina, or Ascanius son to Eneas and Crusa, was the kyng of Latyns, there be dyuers opynyons; but all wryters agre that Ascanius was kyng of Latyns next after Eneas, and ŷ Siluius reynyd next Ascanius, and was ŷ .iii. kyng of Latyns after kyng Latinus, of whom Romulus dyscendyd, ŷ furst byldyd ŷ cite of Rome and of hym toke ŷ name of Rome; furst as here after shall apere in the proces of this worke.

¶ And also of the begynnyng of the inhabytacōn of this realme of Englōd, somtyme callyd Britteyn, and before that Albion, there be dyuers oppynions. We rede in the Englysh Cronycle that one Dioclysyā kinges of Siriēs had .xxxii. doughters, which were maryed vppō one day to .xxxii. kinges, which womē all waxyd stobern and dysobedyēt, ŷ theyr husbādes cōplaynyd to theyr father therof, which fader callyd thē all to geder and therefore fowle rebukyd them. But all they beyng incorrygyble, waxyd more froward, and by one assent the same nyght after, for anger, slew all theyr husbandys and cut theyr throtes;

wherfore the seyð Dyoclysyā was so sore mouyd þ̄ he intendyd to put them all to deth, but yet by the aduysē of hys counsell refraynyd that, and put thē all in a shyp in the se, and no nother pson with thē : which womē after, by aduētūre, ar̄yuyd here in this realme, whych then was all wyldernes and desolate of people, and callid þ̄ lād Albyon, after the name of the eldest sister callyd Albyon. And after þ̄ the Deuyll, takyng bodys of the eyre and mānys nature in other cōtreysshed by polucyō, cā and lay by those womē here, and begat of thē horrible giātis, which ther cōtinuyd tyll þ̄ cōmyng of Brute. But this story semyth more meruelouse thā trew ; and though it hath cōtynued here in Englōd and takyn for a trewth amōg vs Englyshmē, yet other pepull do therfore laugh vs to skorne, and so me semyth they may ryght well. And I maruell in my mynd that mē hauyng any good naturull reason wyll to sych a thyng gyue credence ; for no man can tell who is þ̄ auctour of this story, nor of whom it shuld come, nor of any wryter of name in this land that euer wrote therof ; nor also we rede in nō hystories of any other cōūtrei of any sych kyng in Siria, nor of any sych story ; which story if it were trew wold haue been put in wrytyng by some hystoryer in þ̄ same cūtrei, or in some other cūtrei, cōsyderyng that in euery cūtrei they wryte of many other thyngys of mych lesse wonder. And also a man hauyng reason may well iuge that the thyng is not only vnlyke to be trew, but almost impossible, that a gret kyng shuld haue .xxxii. doughters all to be maryed at one day ; and also as vnlykly that there shuld be .xxxii. kyngys maryed at one day ; and also very vnlyke that all those womē shuld be of so yuyll disposiciō, and at one tyme so cruelly myndyd, to do sych ā abhominable dede ; but þ̄ amōg all thē there shuld be one of those systers at the lest somewhat dysposyd to goodnes, and to refrayne from the doying of sych a cruell deed (In the which I trow that women at this day wyll take my part). And also very vnlykly that sich a shyp cōmyng frō so far a cōtrei shuld neuer touch lād tyll it cam hyther ; cōsideryng that the course is so lōg aboue .iii. or .iiii. M myles by see, and dyuers other lādis and ylādis betwene ; and also the passage so straye and daungerous that they must nedis come thorow many

straytis and shawllys, and lykly to touch lād in many other placys or they coud come in to this oceiā see; as they that be seen in Cosmogrifye may well pceyue by the syght of the quart or Mappa mundi. And also it stādith nother with good feyth nor reasō ȳ ȳ deuyll shuld, by sych maner, ingender wyth women; which yf the Dyuell had sych power than, why shuld he not now haue lyke power at this day, whereof now adays we se no sych generaciō; and also if ȳ deuyll had sych power, I se not why those childern so genderyd shuld be Gyauntes, and excede all other in greatnes, cōsydering that ȳ seede and the place where it was sowne was no nother but sych whereof chylterne be ingēderyd at this day: wherfore I suppose no nother but that it is but a faynyd fable that thys lād shuld be callyd Albyō for that cause. But yet other writers of hystories therbe which say that this lād was furst callyd Albyon by reasō of the white Cleeuys and Rokkys at Douer, which be seen far in a bryght day, and was so callyd Albyō of the Latyns, as it were the whyte lād; for Albus is laten for white. ¶ But ferthermore, how this land after that tooke the name of Brytteyn, ther be dyuers opyniōs. How beit the comen oppynyō is that Brute, son to Siluius son to Ascanius sō to Eneas which cā frō Troy, was the furst that inhabytyd thys lād whē ther was no people here but only Gyaūtys; which seyeng we haue only of one Galfridus Monumetensis, whych wrote that story in the tyme of kyng Hēry the second about the yere of Crist M. C. lxx: and as it aperyth by his prologe he dyrectid his booke to Robert yerle of Glocester, which was vncle to the seyde kyng Hēry, affermyng in the same prologe that one Walter Archedeacon of Oxford brought hym ā olde boke writē in ȳ britten speche, which he translatyd in to Latē, cōprehendīg ȳ sayd story of Brute; al beit he writith not ȳ name of ȳ boke, nor who was ȳ auctor therof. But ȳ oldest writyng ȳ we rede of āny auctor, is ȳ boke of ȳ cōmētaryes of Julius Cesar, which indytyd ȳ work hī selfe at ȳ tyme when he cōqueryd this land and made it subiect to the Romayns, which was .xlviij. yere before the byrth of Cryst. In the which he toke grete dylygēce to dyscrybe the realme; in so mych ȳ he shewyth playnly and truly furst ȳ form

and faciō of this lād, and ⁊ quantyte therof, how māny myle it cōteyneth euery wey, how ⁊ greate ryuers ren, and also he dyscrybyth ⁊ maner of ⁊ vse of the people, how be it he spekyth nothīg of Brute: nor for al the serch that he made, he cōwd neuer come to the knowlege how this lād was furst inhabytyd. Also Gyldas, that wrot de gestis Brittonū about the yere after the byrth of Cryst .vi. C.—and also holy Beda, that wrot historia ecclesiastica gētis Anglorū about the yere of Crist .vii. C.xxx—speke nothyng that this Brute shuld be the furst inhabytor of this lād somtyme callyd Gret Brytteyn: yet Beda writyth presysely in his seyde boke that the furst inhabytors of this lād, that cawsyd it to be callyd Brytteyn, were the Brytteyns that cam frō Lytyll Brytteyn, thā callyd Armonicā; and also that the Pictis that cam from Cythia were the furst that inhabydid the lād of Skotlād. Also we can not fynde in the Cronycles of the Italyons, nor of the Rōmayns, that euer there was any kīg callyd Siluius that had āny sych sonne callyd Brutus which sholde sle his fader, as Galfridus wrytith. Which thyng men thynk yf it had be trew, they wold haue put that ī theyre Cronycles, as well as they dyd other thyngis of lasse meruell, cōsyderyng that they touchand speke both of Ascanius and of Siluius, and of all theyre chyldern, and what became of them and how they endyd that succedid thē as kyngis. Also it is not ōly affirmid by ⁊ seyde Galfridus, but also by diuers other, ⁊ the cōtrei of Gallia was gretely inhabytid with peple at ⁊ sege of Troy, and lōg and many yeris before ⁊ time supposid ⁊ Brute shuld enter this land of Brytteyn; wherefore diuers greate lernid men thynke it is not lykely but in maner impossible, that this lande of Britteyn shulde be so lōg after that desolate with out peple, tyll the tyme supposid of the comyng of Brute; cōsideryng that the rokkis and mounteyns about Douer be so grete and dayly opynly seen of them of Gallya, and so small dystauns a sonder, and the see so narrow, that it may welbe sayled ī lesse than .iii. howris. And this cōtrei of Bryttayn so fayre so plesaunt and so fertell, that it is most likely that the people of Gallia shuld come ouer other to fyssh, or for desyre of knolege of the land, and to make some habytaciō therin, and not to suffer it to be all

desolate and vnknowyn till the comyng of Brute. Therfore some men at this day therbe, which, what for these resons and dyuers other, take that story of Galfridus but for a feyned fable; supposyng that because this Galfridus was a welchman born, that he shuld fayn that story hīself for the ōly preys of his cōtremē; because we rede of no writer of storis before his dais that euer wrot therof, or spekith of this Brutus, nor makith therof no mēciō. But that not withstōdīg I will not deny that story of Galfridus, nor I will not precisely affirme it; for all thoughe that many men suppose it to be but a feined story, yet I will not let here in this littell worke to reherse hit some what after Galfridus, seing not only for this cawse that I wold haue euery man precisely to belefe it, but because ⁊ ī the same story reding a man may se many notable examples of diuers noble princes ⁊ wisely and vertuesly gouernid theire people, which may be an example to prīcis now liuing to vse the same; and also a mā reding in the same shall see how ⁊ the stroke of god fell euer vppō the people, other by battell, darth, or deth, for their vice and misleuing; and also how diuers princis and grete mē, exaltid in pride and ambicion, vsing tiranny and cruelte, or ells being neclygēt in gouernyng of theyre people, or giffing them self to vicious liffing, were euer by the stroke of God ponished for the same: therfore accordīg to my promise I shall breuely reherse ⁊ seid story as here after ī this proces doth apere.

¶ Also as towchyng the begynnyng of the Frenchmen, the comyn opinion amonge them is ⁊ they were furst callid Sicābri, & ⁊ they shuld discend of Ector of Troy, that is to sey of Francus or Frācion, son of Ector; which, after the distrucciō of Troy, cā in to Gallia and married the doughter of Rhemus, kyng of Gallia. But as to that opinion I can nother affyrm it nor denye: but yet accordyng as the comyn opynyōn is moste among them, I shall reherce it as here after shall appere.

¶ Also for the more playn explanacion of this presēt work, they that lyst to rede herein must note ⁊ before the byrth of Cryst

the namis of the kynges of Albaynis, of whom the Romainys descendyd, and also the Romainys, stand euer in the hyghyst part off this boke; and the namis off the Brytteyns in the myddis, and the namis of the Frēchmē stād beneth. And after ŷ byrth of Crist, the namis of the Popis stād in the hyghyst part of this boke aboue the Romainys, and thē the ēpours of Rome, and next the Brytteyns or Engleshmē, and next beneth thē the Frēchmē, and next beneth them the Dukis of Braban and Erllys off Flaūders, and afterward the Normayns stand lowyst of all, as more pleynty shall appere by theyr lynis and letters which well markyd shall dyrect you justly from one to a nother.

Roman History.

Roman History.

¶ **Siluius Postumus**, which was the thyrd kyng of Latins, after kyng Latinus, as apperyth before in the prolog, had issue, Eneas Siluius, which reynid there .xxx. yere; and after hym succedyd hys son Latinus Siluius, which reynyd .I. yere; but some writers, as Eusebius and other, affyrme that Latinus reynid next after Siluius Postumus, and was son to Lauina by her second husband callyd Melāpodes, and that Eneas Siluius reynyd next after Latinus. But all wryters agree that eyther of them reynyd there as kingis. After whom there reynyd Alba Siluius.

¶ **Alba Siluius**, son to Eneas Siluius, as Eusebius and other affyrme, reynyd next; he edefyed and performid the cyte of Alba in Italy, of whom the Albayns tooke theyr furst name.

¶ **Siluius Athis**, son of Alba Siluius, was next kyng of Latyns and of the Albayns.

¶ **Capis Siluius**, sō of Siluius Athis, was next kyng of Latins and

Albayns. It is seyde he byldyd Capia, the grete cyte in Champyane ; but other wryters holde that it was first callyd Vulturnus ; and when the Samnytes toke it, it was callyd Capia, after the name of theyr duke callyd Capia.

¶ **Capetus Siluius**, son of Capis, was next kyng of Latyns and Albayns.

¶ **Tiberinus Siluius**, sō to Capetus, was next kyng of Latyns and Albayns ; he was drownyd in y water of Tybere, whereof as some afferme that water toke his name.

¶ **Agrippa Siluius**, son to Tyberinus, was next kyng of Latyns and Albayns.

¶ **Aremulus Siluius**, so to Agrippa, was next kyng of Latyns and Albayns ; he was slayn in a tempeste by lightenyng and thonder.

¶ **Auentinus Siluius**, sonne to Aremulus, was next kyng of Latyns and Albayns ; he was slayn and byryed in the mount Auyntyn, where of some say that hyll toke his name, but some sey it toke his name of a flyght of certeyn byrdys commyng ouer it, which they seyde in laten, de aduentu auium.

¶ **Procas Siluius**, son to Auentinus, was next kyng of Latyns and Albayns.

¶ **Amulius Siluius**, the yonger son of Procas, was next kyng of Albayns ; he expulsyd his elder broder Numiter, and slew Lansus his sonne, and cawsyd Rehea his doughter to be a nonne of sych an order, that yf she brake her vyrgynyte she shuld dye, but that not with stondyng, she was gotten with chylde by one vnknowyn, and had .ii chylde at a byrth, which after were callyd, one Romulus, a nother Remus, wherefore Amulius causyd Rehea to be buryed quik, and the .ii

cheldern to be cast in the water of Tiber, but yet by prouycyō deuyne, they were preseruyd, and by the water syde foūd alyue by one Faustus, which norryshed them tyll they cam to age, which chyldern than slew the seyde Amulius.

Romulus and Remus, bredyrne and twyndels, after that they had slayne Amulius, byldyd a cyte in the place where they were cast in the water to haue been drownyd. But because it was not knowyn who was the elder brother, some dyscord grewe betwene thē who shuld haue the name of the cyte; wherfore it was agreed, after the custome of theyre old wichcraftys, that eyther of them shuld stand vppon dyuers hyllis, and ouer whose hed so euer it were that most number of byrdys callyd Vulturys dyd fle, y he shuld haue the premynece; wherof the fortune fell to Romulus, wherfore he namyd the cyte Rome. But incontinent after this, Romulus slew his broder Remus because he went ouer the wallys of the cyte contrary to his broders cōmaundement; wherfore then Romulus abode soole kyng of Rome. This Romulus ordeynyd that there shuld be a .C. of the wysyst of the people elect, whiche were callyd senatours, by whose counsell all matters shuld be dyrectyd. This Romulus was slayn in a tempest of thunder and lyghtenyng, that no man coud tell where his body became. Therefore the Rōmayns seyde that he was translatyd into heuyn, wherfore afterward they honouryd hym as a god.

Numa Pompilius, a Sabyne born, was next kyng of Rome. Because ther was oft dyscord betwen the Rōmayns and Sabyne, it was agreed that bothe cuntreys shuld be as one, and the kyng to be chosyn by eleccyon and agreemēt of both people; which Numa, so chosyn, gouernyd y people by sych maner, that he was without any war duryng his lyfe; wherfore the Rōmayns incresyd meruelously both in strenght and ryches.

Tullius Hostilius, a Rōmayn, was next chosyn kīg; he made war agaīst y Albayns, and subduyd the kyng callyd Caius Ciuilis, and

brent and dystroyed the cyte of Alba, and made all the people subduyd to Rome. This Tullius was slayn with thonder and lyghtening.

¶ **Ancus Marcius**, son to Numa, was next chosyn king of Rome. He adioynyed to the cite of Rome the mountes Auentyne and Janicule, and was the furst that byldyd the bryge ouer Tyber.

¶ **Tarquinius Priscus**, borne in the cite of Tarquin, was next chosyn king of Rome. He doubled the nōber of the senatours, and made another .C. which were callid peeres or faders, of the yōg senatours. He fortified gretly the cite of Rome. He gaue his doughter in marriage to Seruius Tullius, wherefore, by the menis of the chileren of Ancus, he was in his pales slayn by treason.

¶ **Seruius Tullius** was next king; not made by the cōsēt of all the peple, but only by cōsēt of the peres. He made the diche about the town walles of Rome, and was after slayn by Tarquinius his sō in law.

¶ **Tarquinius Superbus**, .s. the proud son to Tarquinius Priscus, was nexte king of Rome; he was the furst that vsurpid and took vppon hī to be king without eleccion of the people, or of the peeris. This Tarquinius Superbus had a sō callid Sextus Tarquinius, which raueshid one Lucres, wife to Tarquinius Colantinus; wherfore this Lucres thinkyng herself vnworthy euer after to lye by her husband, and in purgyng herself because it was agaynst her wyll, in the presens of her husband, and of diuers other, stykkyd herself with a knyfe to the hart, for a perpetuall memory therof to be had; for which cruell deed of rauyshment, done by ŷ seyde Sextus Tarquinius, the Romayns did put downe the seyde Tarquinius Superbus from his dignyte of kyngdome, and banyshyd hym and all his chyldren for euer: and after, they had ŷ name of a kyng in as gret hatred as the name of a theef; wherfore, in stede of a kyng, they made .ii. consulles to gouern the peopull, whose auctorytis shuld last but for one yeer.

¶ **Lucius Junius Brutus and Tarquinius Colantinus** were yfurst cōsullis chosyn in Rome; but sone after, Tarquinius Colantinus was put out, because of hatered that the Romainys had to the name of Tarquinius, and one Publius Valerius Publicola was made consull in his sted.

¶ **Publius Valerius Publicola**, thus beyng consull, made warr agayns Tarquinius Superbus, and slew of his people aboue .xvi M. for the which victory he was the furst of the consullis that euer rod in a chariot triumphant in the cyte of Rome; he was a man of grete justyce and equite; and after that he had be .iiii tymis consull he made warr agaynst the Sabyns, and dyscomfytyd them, and the prayes and prycis that he toke there brought to Rome; wherefore, when he was ded, the people of Rome dyd spend the .iiii. part of there goodis at his beryeng and cost at his funerallis. Also, after that, there was a new order and dygnyte made among the Romainys, which was callyd a dictator, a greter dygnyte aboue the consullis, which had auctorite to make ordynances and lawis, and was as master of yf people, but this dictator was chaungeable euery half yere, and sometyme after at euery thryd yeere, as some wryters affyrme, and some tyme at euery .v. yere; and when his yerys was past, and he dyschargyd of his auctoryte, he shuld be than answerable to all byllis and complayntis that any of the people coud alegge agayn him, and ponyshed for euery thyng that he had done contrary to justice; therfore ther was euer so good and idyfferēt justyce vsyd and had among the Romainys, that all the world spake of thē honor; the executyng of which good and indefferent justyce cawsyd them to grow in ryches and to be of power and strenght aboue āny people in the world; therfore wold good it were so vsyd at this day in the realme of England, that euery jugge and other offycers hauyng auctoryte to execute yf lawis, or to gouerne or to rule in āny office, shuld be remouable at .iiii. or .v. yere or lesse, and thē to answeere to all cōplayntis that shuld be allegid agayns him, and to be ponished for euery offence that he had committid in his rome, and then ther wold not be so mich extorcione and oppressione

of the pore people, nor so manny iniuries as is now adays. The furst that euer was dictator in Rome, was callid Largius, and with hym was another chosyn to be master of y chyualry, of whō y furst was callyd Spurius Cassius.

¶ Also after this ther was one chosyn dictator which was callyd **Quintus Cincinnatus**, which was an husband man; which, as he was dryfing his cart, was requyred by the senate to take vppon hym y dygnyte of dictator, which he refusyd, but at the last they constraynyd hym therto. This Quintus Cincinnatus and one Lucius Tarquinius, which was elect captayn of cheualry, had grete victory of theyr enmyes; but this Quintus Cincinnatus cawsyd all the prayse and pryses to be dystributyd to y men of warr, nothyng reseruyd to hymselfe therof.

¶ When the Romainys had obteynyed the victory, and had the domynyon of the most part of Europa, then they send **Claudius** consull into Affryk, where he had vycory, and after retornyd to Rome. These Romainys, in eleccion of theyr consullys and other offycers, had sometyme varyaūce amonge them self; for pacyfyeng wherof, and for trew and indyfferenteleccyons to be had, they ordeynyed and made secret eleccyōns, and that no mā shuld gyue his voys opely by mouth, nor by wrytyng, wherby it shuld be knowyn to whō he gaue his voyce. Some wryters affyrme that it was this maner: furst, they ordenyd therfore certeyn ballys, wherof euery one that shuld giue his voyce shuld haue a ball delyueryd in hys hand; and also there were certeyn pottys ordenyd, and vppon euery pot the name of hym wrytten that stode for the eleccyon; and he that shuld gyue hys voyce shuld hold the ball in his hand close, and put his hād in euery pot, and let the ball fall secretly in what pot he lyst, and pull his hand out agayn close, tyll y he had perusyd euery pot, and at the last pot to pull his hand out opyn; and he in whose pot most ballys were found was preferryd in the eleccyon, and so then no man coud tell, but

only he him self that put in the ball, to whō he had gyuen his voyce, nor in what pot he had put the ball ; which order, if it were vsyd in this realme, wold cause ŷ ther shuld not be so mych troble and bysynes, nor so mych anger and malyse, as growith and folowith in our eleccyons, as we se dayly by experyence.

¶ Also, after this tyme, one **Valerius Maximus** beyng consull, made the Tarentynis and Athenys, and dyuers other cytes, subiectis to Rome.

¶ Also sone after this, **Marcus Regulus** and **Lucius Mallus**, cōsullis, made warr agayns Amilcar, duke of ŷ Affricās, and had victory and slew mych peple, and brought .xxvii.M. presoners to Rome ; wherfore ŷ Cartaginēs required peace and coud not obteyn it ; wherfore ŷ warr cōtynuyd ; and after, Marcus Regulus was dyscōfytyd. Sone after that, Hannyball was made duke of the Affrycās, and cam with a grete number of people agayns the Romayns into Italy, and in a meruelous grete battell there, had the victory, and slew of the Romayns so many, that the golde rynges ŷ were pullyd of ŷ fyngers of the ded mē dyd fyll .iii. bushell ; yet, after this, Scipio, beyng cōsull of Rome, wēt in to Affrica against Hannyball, and there in a battell venquyshyd the Cartaginēs, and slew aboue .xx.M. horse men and toke almost as manny prisoners, and subdewyd Cartage to the cyte of Rome, wherfore he was callyd Scipio Affricanus. The Romayns at this tyme were meruelous strong ; they vsyd to send dyuers cōsulles into dyuers prouynces, to make war and to make ŷ people subiectes and tributaries to Rome, and had no kīg nor other prīce, nother gouernors, but cōsullis and a dictator remouable ; which order so cōtenuyd vntyll ŷ tyme of Caius Julius Cesar.

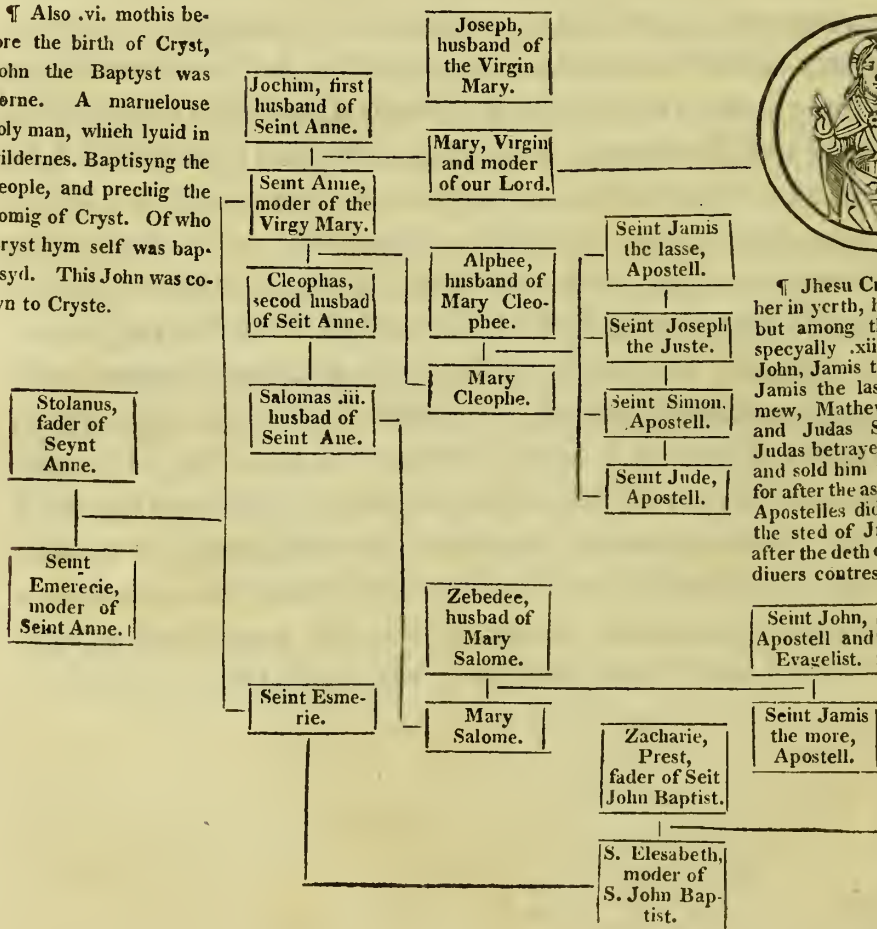


¶ Caius Julius Cesar, beyng consull, was sent in to Gallya, which vanquysshed the people there that lyffyd thā with out āny kyng, and but vnder certeyn soueryens in euery towne and cyte by thē self, and made them subiect to Rome. He vāquysshed also Ariouistus, kyng of Garmayn, and made the cōtrei subiect to Rome. He also passyd the se and cam in to Gret Bryttayn; but in his there aryving he lost many of his shippis and much people. Agayns home Cassibelanus, ther beyng kyng, made sharp war, that whether it were for lake of puruians of vitell, or for lak of power, he was fayn to retorne agayne in to Gallya. But the next yere after, he cam a gayn with a strong power, and ouer cam Cassibelan, and made the lande tributarie to Rome, payeng yeerely to the Romainys .iii.M.li. After that, Julius retornyd in to Gallya; and when he had ther made all the hole contrey vnder the subieccion of Rome, he sent vnto Rome requiryng to haue a new luster to hym grauntyd, which, by Marcellus, cōsull by meanis of Pompeius, was to hym denyed; and also ŷ he shuld not ēter in to Rome with the power and nomber of his harmy; but Julius, what by his oun strenght, and with the helpe of hys fryndys in Rome, enteryd with his army, with triumphe and grete pompe, and anon toke vppon hym to be callyd Dictator perpetuus, and so made hymself emperour and Cesar, and made grete warr agayns his enmys and the Senators, and slew Pompeius and dyuers, other. But after ŷ with in v. yeris, because he toke vpō hī to giue certeyn romes and offyces which were accustomed to be gyuyn by ŷ people, and for ŷ ŷ he was so hye myndyd ŷ he wold make no remouyng from his sege, nor contenance of salutacion, when the senators cam toward hym, his enmes of the Senators therfore conspyryd agayns hym, and in the councell house slew hym with bodkyns.



Octavianus Cesar Augustus, of whom the ēperours toke the name of Augustus, son to Caius Octavius, and Athia, doughter to Julia, sister to Julius Cesar, was next made emperour. In the .xlii. yere of his ēpyre, Jhesu Cryste, the sō of God, and secōd person in Trinite, took mānis nature, and was borne in the cyte of Bedlem in Jury, of the Virgyn Mary; conceyuyd without mānis seed, by the ispiracyon of the Holy Gost, as apperith in the bokis of the .iiii. Euāgelistis, Mark, Mathew, Luke, and John, which wrote of his godhed, māhood, workis, and myracles. He taught and prechyd a new law, exortīg all mē to meeknes and charite, rebukīg syn and dispisīg war; all contrary to the mīdis of the gret kingis and go-uernours of the Romaīs, and sich other; but he dyspisyd all worldly honour, conquest, and victory, and taught and exortide eueri mā to loue his ēmy, and to do good for yuyll.

¶ Also .vi. mothis before the birth of Cryst, John the Baptist was borne. A marnelouse holy man, which lyuid in wildernes. Baptisyng the people, and prechig the comig of Cryst. Of who Cryst hym self was baptisyd. This John was co-syn to Cryste.



Jhesu Cryste.

¶ Jhesu Cryste, while he was her in yerth, had mani disciples; but among them al he electyd specyally .xii. Peter, Andrew, John, Jamis the more, Thomas, Jamis the las, Philip, Barthelmew, Mathew, Simon, Jude, and Judas Skaryot; but thys Judas betrayed hys master Cryst, and sold him to the Jews; therfor after the ascencion of Crist, the Apostelles did chose Mathie in the sted of Judas. These .xii. after the deth of Cryst, prechid in diuers contres, and conuertid the pepul to Cristis feyth.



John Baptist.

¶ **Tiberius**, sō of Liuia, whiche was wyfe to Octauyan, was next ēperour, ŷ yere after ŷ byrth of Cryst .xvi. He was a man of grete literature. He made neuer war in his owne persō, but by hys capteyns.

¶ **Caius Caligula** was next ēperour. He was a vicius mā, and wold haue bē worshypid as a god.

¶ **Claudius**, son of Drusus, which was broder to Tybereus and vncle to Calygula, was the .v. emperour frō the byrth of Cryste, xliii. yeere. He cā in to Brytteyn, now callyd Englōd, and slew the kyng Guiderus.

¶ **Nero**, sō of Claudius, was the .vi. ēperour frō the byrth of Crist, .lvii. yere. He was most tirant and cruell of all ēperours. He slew his moder, to se the place where he was cōceuyd. He slew his master Senecque, Lucain, and many of ŷ senatours; he brent a gret part of Rome for his plesure; he made the furst persecuciō vppon the crysten men, and put to deth Sent Peter and Sent Paull; he fled from ŷ people that made insurreccion agayne hym, and fynally therfore slew hym self.

¶ **Galba** after that cam owt of Spayne, and was made the .vii. ēperour from the byrth of Cryst .lxxi. But after that he had reynyed at Rome .vii. monythis they smote of his hed.

¶ **Otto** was the .vii. emperour. He wā .iii. batteyllisagayns Vitellius, and in the .iiii. was put to flyght: wherfore in dyspayre therfore, he slew hym selfe, after that he had be emperour .iii. monythis.

¶ **Vitellius** was next emperour, the yere of Cryst .lxxii. He was takyn by ŷ people of Vaspaciā, with in viii monythis, and slayn, and cast in the water of Tyber.

¶ **Vespasian** was next ēperour. He besegid the cyte of Jerusa-

lem, and laft his son Titus at the fege; and after came to Rome, and ther dyed.

¶ **Tytus**, sone to Vaspasyan, was nexte emperour, the yere of Cryst .lxxx. He destroyed þe cyte of Jherusalē, where .vi. C.M. Jewes were slayne, and a .C.M. taken prysoners and solde; and some wryte there was .xi.c.m slayne; and then the kyngdome of Jewes decayed and was destroyed.

¶ **Domician**, sone to Vaspasyan and broder to Tytus, was nexte emperour. He was a grete tyraūt, and dyd þe .ii. persecucion agaynst the crysten men, and banysshed Saynt John the Euangelyst in to the yle of Pathmos.

¶ **Nerua** was nexte emperour. He adnulled þe actes of Domician, and then Saynt John came from Pathmos to Ephese.

¶ **Troianus**, sone adoptyfe to Nerua, was next emperour: þe yere of crsty .C. He dyde þe .iii. persecucion of crysten men. This Troianus was called the best of al emperours, and the moost ryghtful and indyfferent juge þe euer was; þe it is sayd þe Saynt Gregory, longe after his dethe, prayed to God for his saluacion: by whose prayer, by especyal grace, he was delyuered out of hell and saued, as some holde oppynyon.

¶ **Adrian**, son of Ely Adrian, cosyn to Troian, was made emperour the yere of Cryste .C.xix. He was expert both in Greke tong and Laten; he restored the cyte of Alexander, in Egypt, late dystroyed by the Romainys; he reedified þe cite of Jerusalem, and set the sepulcre of Cryste within the same.

¶ **Anthoninus Pius**, begottyn of Adriā, and his sō adoptyfe, was, after Adriā, made ēperour, and reynid .xxiiii. yere.

¶ **Marcus Aurelius Antonin**, callid the Trew, and **Lucius** the Trew, his broder, sonnis to Marcus, held the empyre ioyntely, after theyr fader, .xi. yere; thē **Lucius** dyed, and **Marcus** contynnued ēperour .viii. yere. He made the .iiii. percecusion vppon the cristen men.

¶ **Lucius Aurelius Antonin**, callid **Comodus**, son of **Marcus**, was after his father emperour, the yere of Crist .C.lxxxii. He was lyke to **Nero** of wykkydnes, and therfore of skorn; he was callyd **Comodus**; that is to sey, profitable: for he was vnprofitable, and to euery man hurtful, and in cōclusion was slayne in his bed.

¶ **Helius Pertinax** was next made emperour, agaynst his wyll, by the senat, the yere of Crist .C.xc.iiii. and was slayne by one **Dedius Saluius Julianus**, after that he had holdin the empyre .vi. monethis.

¶ **Dedius Saluius Julianus**, a great cōnīg man of ŷ law, after the deth of **Helius**, (whom he slew,) was made emperour; but he was slayne within .vi. monethis after; therfore some counte him for no emperour.

¶ **Seuerus Pertinax**, born in Africa, was emperour the yere of Cryst .C.xc.v. He came with a great host in to Grete Briteī. Also he did the .v. persecuciō vppon ŷ cristen mē; where Seynt **Hiren**, archebisshope of **Lyon**, Seīt **Lyonide**, ii. Saītes, perpetue and felycyte were martered. He dyed in Grete Brytein, and lyeth at **Yorke**.

¶ **Basianus**, called **Caracalla**, sō to **Seuerus**, by a Brittē womā, was next ēperoure after his fader, ŷ yere of Crist .CC.xiii. He was a lecherus mā, and lay by his stepmoder, callid **Iuliana**, and did many other cruel dedes.

¶ **Opilius Macrinus** was, by the men of war, made emperour the

yere of Crist .CC.xx. and hild the ēpire but one yere: for they that chase hym, slew hym and his sonne Diaduenus in the cytte of Antioch.

¶ **Anthoniūs Heliogabalus**, bastard to Caracalla, was then made ēperour: his cōdiciōs were vile and detestable; wherfore, by ſ power of ſ mē of war, he and his moder were slayn, after ſ he had reynid .iiii. yere.

¶ **Aurelius Alexander** was next ēperour; a vertious man; it was neuer found that euer he dyd wrong to any man. He made warre agaynst the Parthes. He was slayne by the men of warr, by the occasion of Maximian, at the cite of Magunce.

¶ **Iule Maximian** occupied then the ēpire, wythout auctorite of the senate; he made the .vi. parsecution vppon the crystyn men. This Maximian, as Capitalius resitith, was sich a glotton that he wold ete xl. l. weyght of flesh in a day, and drīk therto a mew of wyne, which is almost .iiii. galons. He was, by the senate, declaryd enmy to the comen wele, and depriuid of his empyre.

¶ **Gordian** the Old was emperour next after. He reynid but one yere.

¶ **Pupienus and Balbius** were next made emperours; and Gordian, sonn of the doughter of Gordian the Old, made Cesar. These held the empire one yere, and then were both slayn in the paleys.

¶ **Gordian** the Yonger, before said Cesar, was thē next emperour, the yere of Crist .CCxli. He made war agayne the Parthes, and as he returnid, by the means of Phillip Darabye, he was slayn.

¶ **Phylip Darrabye**, before sayd, was thē made emperour, the yere of Crist .CCxlvii. He had a son callyd Philip, whiche he ioyned

with hym in his ēpyre. He was the furst cristin man of all kyngys or ēperours Romaynes, at which time he made grete solēnites and sportis, .iii. dayes and nightis continuing. This seyd Phyllyp and his son were put down and slayn by Decius; that is to sey, the fader at Veron, and the son at Rome; after that they had reyned vii. yere.

¶ **Decius**, borne in Campeyn, or Hungarie, was then made ēperour. He made the .vii. persecuciō agaīst the cristin mē, where Seynt Fabiā and Saynt Cornill, pope, and Seynt Appolin where martyrid. He was slayne in a battell, but some say he slewe hym selfe.

¶ **Gallus Hostilius** was thē made ēperour. He ioynid with hī his son Volucianus; they kept f̄ ēpire .ii. yere.

¶ **Lycinius Valerian**, with **Galien**, his son, were made ēperours the yere of Crist .CClvi. At the begynyng he was good and gentyll, but by the instigacion of an herytyke, that was his famylier, he made the .viii. persecution agayns the cristin men, of whome God toke vēgeāce; for in a bateyle agayns Sapor, kyng of Perces, he was takyn and his eyen put out, and abode there all his life prysoner, tyed wyth cheynis.

¶ **Galien Decius**, sonne of Valeriā, after his fader was takyn, began to be sole emperour, the yere of Cryste .CClxii. He made the .viii. persecucyon agaynst the crysten men, where Seynt Syxt, pope, Saynt Laurence, and Seynt Ypolyte were martyryd. This Galiē, heryng of the misery of his fader, refreynid to do forther persecucyon vppon the crysten men; but he was slayne by the lernyd coucell, after that he had reynid sole emperour .ix. yere.

¶ **Flavius Claude**, borne at Dalmacie, was next emperour one yere.

¶ **Duyntilyus**, brother to Claude, was next emperoure. He was slayne by the lernyd men after he had bene emperour .xvii. days.

¶ **Galerius Aurelianus**, borne in Panonie, or Hongarye, made the .x. persecuciō agaynst the crysten mē, where Saynt Colūb, S. Patrocle, S. Agapit, were martyryd. Thys Aureliā was, after, brēt by lyghthenīg, in Byzunce; now callyd Constantynople.

¶ **Annius Tacitus** was next emperour. He was, in the yle of Ponthus, slayne.

¶ **Florian**, brother to Tacitus, was next emperoure, the yere of Cryst .CC.lxxix. He was slayne by the people of Tharsie, after that he had ben emperour .ii. monethys.

¶ **Aurelius Probus**, borne in Panonyc, or Hōgarye, was next emperour. He made great warr agaynst ŷ Germainys, and had victory; wherfore he was reseyuyed with tryumph, in the cyte of Rome; and that was the last tryumph of .CCC.xx. tryumphis. This Probus, in an insurrecciō of men of armys, was slane; after that he had ben emperour .vi. yere.

¶ **Aurelius Carus**, born at Narbone, in Gall, was next ēperour, the yere of Cryst .CC.lxxxv. He ioynyd wyth hym in the empyre his .ii. sonnys Carinus and Numerianus. He made warr in Mesopotonia, and toke ŷ town of Chare; and in Perse wā ŷ townis of Sene and Thesyphōt. He was slayn in a tēpest with lightenyng; and in mediate Numeryanus, his son, was slayn by the men of warr; and Carynus, the other brother, was slayn in a battell agayns Dioclisian.

¶ **Dioclisian**, born at Dalmacye, was then emperoure, the yere of Cryst .CC.lxxxvi. He joynyd wyth hym in the empyre **Maximian**, born at Panonic. These .ii. did the .ix. persecusiō agaynste ŷ cristen

men, where Saynt Mauryce, S. Agnes, S. Anastasie, S. Barb, S. Cryspyne and Cryspinian, S. Crystofer, S. Cosme and Damyan, S. Ciryace, S. Dorathe, S. Eleulye, S. Euphemy, S. Gervays and S. Prothays, S. Adryan, S. Panthalyan, S. Quintyne, S. Sebastyan, S. Theodore, S. Vincent, and many mo in great nōber were martyred; and at the last they renoūcyd theyr empyre, after they had reynyd.xx. yere.

¶ **Constancius and Galeryus Maxymianus** were both made emperours the yere of Cryst .CCC.vii. They partyd the empyre in two partis. Maxymyan had all Illyrycie, or Venys, Asye, and all the oryēt; and Cōstācyus had for his parte Ittalye, Affirke, Spayne, and Gallya; he maryed Helene, doughter to Coell, kyng of Great Bryttayne. Looke more of hym among the kingis of Bryttayne.

¶ **Constantyne** the Graunt, son of Constancius and Seynt Helyn, was next emperour: the yere of Cryst .CCC.ix. both of Rome and Cōstantinople. In hys tyme Maxēce, son to Maximyan, was, by dyuers men of war, made ēperour; but he was put doūe by ŷ seyde Cōstātyne. Vnder whych Maxēce, Seīt Katerine was martyrd. Some say ŷ this Cōstantyn gaue furst possession to Rome.

¶ **Constancius**, the second sonn of Cōstātyne the Graūt, was next emperour: the yere of Cryst .CCC.xl. Vnder him was the .xii. parsecucion of crysten men, for he fell to the sekt of Ariētis.

¶ **Julian Apostata**, son of Cōstancius, brother to Constantine the Graunt, was next ēperour. He made ŷ .xiii. parsecucion agaynst the crysten mē. Vnder hym was martirid Seynt John and Seynt Poll, Romaīs; S. Donat, S. Blase, S. Siriace, and S. Juliane, with many other. He was namid Apostata, because he forsoke the feyth of Cryst, and after did the seyde parsecuciō. He was slayn at a battell agayn the Parses, after that he had reynyd .i. yere and .viii. monethis. The Cronicles here in coūting of yeris do gretly dyscord.

¶ **Iouian**, born at Panone, was next emperour. He reynid but .viii. monthis.

¶ **Valentinian**, born at Panonie, or Hongarie, with his brother **Valens**, were ēperours : the yere of Cryst .CCC.lxxvii. This Valentinian was a good cristen man, and made warr agaynst the Saxons and Germayns, and did them discomfit ; and died after that he had holden the empyre .xi. yere.

¶ **Valens**, his brother, suruiuid, and kept the empyre with Gracian and Valentinian, son to Valentinian before sayd. This Valēs executid ŷ .xiiii. persecucion agaynst ŷ cristē mē, for he was an Ariē, and sēd to the Gotes, doctours to īstruct thē in the law and feyth of the Ariēs, but yet he was by them slayn.

¶ **Gracian**, son of Valentinian, ouer liuid Valens, his vnclē, and then was made emperour : the yere of Cryst .CCC.lxxxii. He ioynid with him in the empire of Constantinople, Theodose. Whyle that Valentinian the yonger reynyed in the occident, he put doune the Ariens, and restorid the church, and put it in good estate.—Here endith the Cronicle of Seynt Jerome, which lyuid vnto this time.

¶ **Theodose** the Graunte, a Spanyarde borne, was nexte emperour : the yere of Crist .CCC.lxxxviii. and after the deth of Gracian ; for before, he helde the empyre of Constantynople .vi. yere with Graciā, and after, helde it .xi. yere, and than dyed at Mylcyne, and his body brought to Constnople. In his tyme Saynt Austyn lyued.

¶ **Archadius and Honorius**, sonnes to Theodose, were ioynt ēperours : the yere of Cryst .iiiC.xcviii. But Archadius was at Constantinople, and Honorius in the West.

¶ **Honorius** ouerliffid Archadius, and then began to be ioynt

ēperour with Theodose, the yōger sonne to Archadius: the yere of Cryst .CCCCxi. He held the empyre .xv. yere.

¶ **Theodose** ſ̄ yonger ſucceded Archadius, his fader, in ſ̄ empyre of Cōſtātynople: the yere of Cryst .CCCC.xxi. and helde it with Honore his vncle, emperour in the occydent .xv. yere, after whose dethe, he ioyned Valentynean the yonger with hym, whyle that Pharamounde Clodyan and Marouce reygned in Fraunce.

¶ **Marcyan** was emperour in Constantynople after Theodose the yonger, whose syſter he maryed; and Valentyne the yonger was emperour in Italy: the yere of Cryst .CCCC.liii. This Marcyan was put to dethe in Constantynople, by his owne ſeruauntes. In his tyme, Saynt Ursula, as ſome wryters afferme, was martyred at Coleyne, and with her .xi.M. virgyns.

¶ **Leo** ſ̄ Furst was nexte emperour, and hyld ſ̄ ēpyre .vi. yere: ſ̄ yere of Cryst .CCCC.lx.

¶ **Leo** the Second, ſon of the doughter of Leo the Furst, was thē choſin emperour; but becauſe he was vnapt for ſ̄ warrys, and thought hym ſelf not mete therfore, for certeyn infirmities that he had, he made his father Zenon emperour.

¶ **Zenon**, fader of Leo, was after his ſon made emperour: the yere of Cryst .liii.C.lxxvi. He lyffyd after .xvii. yere. He ordeynyed the laws in the boke of the Code.

¶ **Anaſtaſe** was next emperour. He gaue great cōmendacyon to Clouys the Furst, cryſtenyd kyng of Fraūce, becauſe he wan Bordeaux and Angolesme, vppō the Vyſegotys, which were of the ſekt of Aryēs, and ſend hym a rich robe, and made hym a patrice and conſull of Rome. At the laſt, this Anaſtaſe, by the exytyng of Achaticis, byſhop of Cōſtātynople, fell to heresy; and Hormisida, pope, ſēt le-

gatys to cōuert hym, but he was obstinate; wherfore, in the presens of hys people, by the iugemēt of God, he was slayn wyth lyghtenyng, after that he had holdyn the empyre .xxvi. yere.

¶ **Justyn** the Auncyon, was then made emperoure: the yere of Cryst .v.C.xviii. He was proteetor of the erysten feyth. He put all the Arryens out of Constantynnople.

¶ **Justynyan**, sone to the syster of Justine, was next emperour: the yere of Crist .v.C. He was a grete wyse man. He caused y lawis of Rome to be orderyd in the bokis of y dygest, and other bokys; and, thoughe he were greatly gyuen to study of bokys, yet he had greate vyetory agaynst hys enmys, and send Belizare, hys lyeu-tenaunt, agaynst the Perses, and subduyd them, and made the Wandellys, in Affryk, obedyent to the empyre. Thys Justinian byldyd a temple in Cōstantinople, ī the honour of Seynt Sophia; and at the laste dyed, beyng owt of hys mynde, after that he had ben emperour .xxxix. yere.

¶ **Justyne** y yonger, born at Trace, nevew to Justynian, was next emperour: the yere of Cryst .v.C.lxv. He was an heritik, of the sekt of Pelagyen. He dyed frantyk.

¶ **Tybere**, sō adoptyfe of Justyne, was next ēperour: y yere of Cryst .v.C.lxxvi. and hyld y ēpire .vii. yere.

¶ **Mauryce**, born in Cappadose, begottyn of Tybere, was next ēperour: the yere of Cryst .v.C.lxxx.iii. He was heddyd by Focas, that was emperoure after hym.

¶ **Focas** was, ī y lyfe of Mauryce, next ēperour: y yere of Cryst .vi.C.iiii. He gaue to Bonifae y .iiii. y tēple callid Pōtheō, and there of made a church, dedycate to our blessyd lady Seīt Mary. This Focas was takyn by Heracle, which smote of his fete and handis, and

after, with a stone tyed about his nek, cast hym in to the see, after that he had holden the empyre .viii. yere.

¶ **Heracle**, son to Heracle, Pretor of Affryk, was next ēperour: the yere of Cryst .vi.C. and .xii. He ēteryd Perse with a gret hoste, and toke Cosdrey the kyng there. He baptysyd his sone, and brought the holy crosse that Cryst dyed vpon in to Jherusalem, before takyn by Cosdrey, and therfore the fēst of the exaltacyon is halowyd. He reynyd .xxx. yere.

¶ **Constantine** the Seconde, sone to Heracle, was next emperour .iiii. monethis.

¶ **Heracleonas**, sonne of Heracle, was next emperour: ŷ yere of Cryst .vi.C.xlii. But because he and his moder rulyd not well ŷ cōmyn wele, they cut his nose and his moders tōg, and were both ex-cilyd. In his tyme, ŷ sekt of Machomyte began; which, syth that tyme, hath meruelously incresyd vppō the cristen men, and dayly doth.

¶ **Constans**, or Constantyne, the .iii. son of Cōstātyne, was next emperour: the yere of Cryst .vi.C.xl.iiii. He was an heretyk, and put the pope Martin to exyle; but at laste he was slayne of his own people.

¶ **Constantyn**, the .iiii. son of Cōstantyne, was next emperour. He was a good man. He cawsid ŷ pope Agatō to call a cōsell at Cōstātynopole, where it was ordeynynd that preestis Grekes myght haue wyfis, which to preestis Latens was forboden.

¶ **Justinian**, sō of Cōstātyn, was next ēperour: ŷ yere of Cryst .vi.C. lxxxvii. Leōcius cut of his nose and eris, and put hī in exile; but after, he obteynynd his ēpyre, and so contynuyd .vi. yere.

¶ **Leoncius**, after he had put Justynyan to exyle, made him selfe ēperour. In his time, one Amilech, admyrall of ſ̄ Sarsins, cam in to Affrik wyth mich people, agaynst whom Leōcius sēd one John Patrik, which bete and droue out ſ̄ Sarsīs; but after, ſ̄ Sarsīs returnid agayn, wherfore John Patryk returnyd toward ſ̄ ēperour for socour, and the people of his army therfore made one Tyber ēperour, whych Tyber wēt streyght to Cōstātynople, and cut of Leōcius nose, and put him in to exyle.

¶ **Tyber** was next emperour: the yere of Cryst .vii.C. In his time Justynyā, before namyd emperour, cam in agayne, and by the helpe of Carinus, slew both Leoncius and Tybere, but he was after slayne in batteyll, by one Phyllipicus; and, duryng this tyme, the realme of Granado was takī by the Sarsyns.

¶ **Philippicus** was next emperour. He was declaryd an herytyk by ſ̄ Pope Cōstātynē, and put downe, and hys eyeys put owte.

¶ **Anastace** was next emperour: the yere of Cryst .vii.C.xiii. He was put owte by Theodose.

¶ **Theodose** was next emperour. He was a crysten man, but he was put from hys empyre.

¶ **Leo** was next emperour. He was an heretyke. He comaūdyd the imagis of seyntyngs to be put down; therfore he was cursyd of Gregory, pope, and so dyed.

¶ **Constantyne**, sonn of Leo, was next emperour: the yere of Crist .vii.C.xlii. He was accursyd of pope Pall, and after dyed.

¶ **Leo**, sonne of Constantyne, was nexte emperoure. He was couetouse of precious stonys, and tooke a crown full of precyous

stonys out of the church of Seynt Sophia, and put it vppō his hed, which stonis so brosid his hed that therof he died. In his time the ēpire decresyd, and the Sarsyns occupied a greate part of the eest, and the Frēchmē rulyd in Italy.

¶ **Constantyne**, the .vi. son to Leo, was nexte emperoure: ŷ yere of Cryst .vii.C.lxxxii. and held it with his moder Hyrenie .x. yere, and than put her out, and helde it sole; but his moder put out his eyes, and was emperesse afterward.

¶ **Hyrenie**, moder of Constantyne, was emperesse next .iiii. yere; and after that, the empyre cam to Charlmayn, kyng of Fraūce.



¶ **Charlys ŷ Graūt**, or **Charlmayn**, beyng kyng of Fraunce, and son of Pepyn, was next ēperour: made by pope Leo, ŷ yere of Cryst .viii.C.i. Because ŷ Romainys cōspyryd agaynst the pope Leo, the pope therfore cam to Charlys the Graunt for help, which restoryd hym agayn to hys see; wherfore the pope, by hys counsell, dyd crowne hym emperour, declaryng that they of Constantynople were vnworthy, because they deffendyd not the church of Rome.

¶ **Lewes the Furst**, callyd the Myld, and son to Charlmayn, was next bothe emperour and kyng of Fraūce: the yere of Cryst .viii.C.xv. He ordeynyd, by a coūsell, a booke to be made of the cerimonis of the church, to be kept by ŷ clergy; he reformyd ŷ pryde and the superfluite of the men of the church. His .iii. sōnis, Lothayr, Lews, and Pepyn, cōspyryd agayns hym, and cōpellyd hym to fle from the empyre in a monkes clothyng; but at the last he obteynyd agayn his imperyall dygnite. Mychell, the ēperour of Constantinople, send to hym the booke of Seynt Denyse de celesti Jerarchia.

¶ **Loytare**, son of Lews the Myld, was next emperour: the yere of Cryst .viii.C.xl. He and his brother Lews had gret warr agayns theyr broder Charlys the Bald, kyng of Frāce, where in a meruelous gret battell, Charlys had the victory. After that, Loyther joynyd wyth hym in his empyre Lews, his son; and after, he went to relygyon.

¶ **Lews**, son of Loyter, was, after his fader, next emperour: the yere of Cryst .viii.C.lv.

¶ **Charlys the Balde**, son of Lewys the Myld, was next ēperour, after ŷ he had be chosyn kyng of Fraūce; and after that he retornid from Rome and came into Fraunce, where he was there poysonyd.

¶ **Lews**, callyd the Stutter, son of Charlys the Bald, was next ēperour: the yere of Cryst .viii.C.lxxviii. and was also kyng of Fraunce, and reynyd but .ii. yere.

¶ **Charlys the Graunt**, sone of Lewys, kyng of Germanyn, was next emperour. After, he waxyd vnprofitable to ŷ comyn wele, and was put out therfore by the pryncis of ŷ ēpyre, after ŷ he had holdin it .x. yere.

¶ **Arnold**, son of Carlomā, was next ēperour: ŷ yere of Crist .viii.C.xc. and was crounyd by pope Formose. He was so etyn with lyse, and coud haue no medeci, and dyed.

¶ **Lews**, sō of Arnold, was next emperour: ŷ yere of Cryst .ix.C.iii. He coud not obteyn ŷ crown imperiall, because Berenger occupied the contrey of Italye.

¶ **Conrard**, broder sō of the emperour Lewis, was next emperour. He hyld the empyre in Almayn, but he coud not obteyn the crown imperiall.

¶ **Hēry**, sō of Otton, duke of Saxon, was next emperour: the yere of Crist .ix.C.xx. but he obteynid not the crown emperyall, but hyld it in almayn, as Conrard dyd.

¶ **Ottō** the Furst, callyd the Graūt, son of Hēry, was next ēperour: the yere of Cryst .ix.C.xxxvii.

¶ **Otton**, the .ii. sonne of Otō the Graunte, was next emperour. He was crownyd lyuīg hys fader, by pope John. He was emperour after the deth of his fader .x. yere and more. He made grete warr with Loyter, kyng of Fraunce, and dyspoyld the contrey; and cam to Parys, and brent the subberbis of the cyte.

¶ **Otton** was next emperour: the yeer of Cryste .xi.C.lxxxiiii. He was crownyd by pope Gregory, and held the empyre .xix. yer and more.

In his tyme, one Crescencius, a consul, put down pope Gregory, and made John, byshop of Pleasaūce, for rewarde of money, pope; whereof Otto, beyng not content, cam to Rome with a grete power, and beseged Crescencius, in Castell Angell; and at ŷ last, took hym and smote of his hed, and put down pope John.

¶ **Henry** was next emperour: the yeer of Cryste .M.iii. He was the furst that was made emperour by ŷ ordynaunce of pope Gregory, by the .vii. elyzours of Almayne.

¶ **Conrard** was next emperour: the yere of Cryst .M.xxv.

¶ **Henry**, son of Conrard, was next emperour: the yeer of Cryste .M.xl. He was crownyd afterward by pope Clement.

This Henry cam in to Italy, and toke Pandulph, prince of Capia, presoner.

¶ **Henry** the .iiii. was electe emperour: the yere of Chryst .M.lvii. He maryed Maude, doughter to kynge Henry of Englande, and dyed without yssue by her. He hylde the empyre .l. yere.

¶ **Henry** the .v. son to Henry the Fourthe, was nexte emperour: the yere of Chryst .M.C.vii. He hylde the see .xx. yere.

¶ **Lothary** was nexte emperour. He hylde the empyre .xi. yere.

¶ **Conrade** was next emperour: the yere of Chryst .M.C.xxxviiij. In his tyme, one mayster Arnolde preched in Rome, agaynst the ryches and superfluytes; and many men alowed hym therin, and folowed hym. But at the last, he was put to deth, because of ſy hatered ſy the clerkes had vnto hym.

¶ **Fredrycke Barbe** was next emperour: ſy yere of Chryst .M.C.lii. He hylde ſy empyre .xxxvii. yere.

¶ **Henry**, sonne to Fredrycke, was nexte emperour: the yere of Chryst .M.C.lxxxix. He hylde the empyre .x. yere.

¶ **Philyppe** was nexte emperour: the yere of Christ .M.C.xCix. He hylde the empyre .x. yeres. He had great warre with Otton, whiche was also chosyn emperour. This Philyppe was slayne in his chambre.

¶ **Otton** was nexte emperour. He was crowned by pope Innocent, and after accursed of the same pope, and deposyd of his empyre at a counsell holdyn at Rome. He hylde the empyre .iii. yeres.

¶ **Fredrycke** was nexte emperour: the yere of Chryst .M.CC.xii. He dyd persecute the churche; but, at a counsell at Lyon, he was deposed by the pope Innocent; that .xxvii. yere, after the electours

were in varyance who shulde be emperour. He hylde the empyre .xxxii. yere.

¶ Henry was nexte emperour. He hylde the empyre .v. yere.

¶ Wyllyam was nexte emperour. He hylde the see .vii. yere.

¶ Rycharde and Alfons were in discorde by the electours, who shulde be emperour, which discorde so contynued .xvi. yere.

¶ Radulphe was nexte chosyn emperour: the yere of Chryst .M.CC.lxxiii. and conformed by pope Gregory. He hylde the see .xix. yere.

¶ Adulphe was nexte emperour. He was slayne in battell, by Albert, sonne to his predecessour, Radulphe.

¶ Albert was nexte emperour, whiche was son to the fornamed emperour Radulphe. He hylde the empyre .x. yere, and was slayne by his syster sonne.

¶ Henry was nexte emperour: the yere of Chryst .M.CCC.viii. He hylde the empyre .vi. yere.

¶ Lewys was nexte emperour. He hylde y^e empyre .xxiiii. yere. He was deposed by pope Clement. He had great warre with Fre-drycke, duke of Austryche, whiche was also chosyn emperour.

¶ Charles was nexte emperour. He hylde the empyre .xxii. yere.

¶ Wyncelant was nexte emperour: the yere of Chryst .M.CCC.lxxix. He hylde the empyre .xxii. yere; but he was vnprofytable to the empyre, therfore he was deposed.

¶ **Robert** was nexte emperour; the yere of Chryst .M.CCCC.i. He hylde the empyre .x. yere.

¶ **Sygismounde** was nexte emperour; the yere of Chryst .M.CCCC.xi. In his tyme were .ii. generall counsels, at Constaunce and Basell.

¶ **Albert** was nexte emperour: the yere of Chryst .M.iiii.C.xxxviii. He hylde the empyre .ii. yere.

¶ **Fredrycke** was nexte emperour. He hylde the empyre .xlii. yere, and than dyd assocate vnto hym Maximilian, his son, by the consent of the electours, and hylde the empyre with his son .vii. yere.



Papal History.

¶ Scint Peter, borne in Betsaida, in Galelye, other wise callid Simon Bariona, was prince of the apostellis ; to whom Jhesu Cryste gaue the keys of heuyn, and auctorite to lose and bīd. He prechid furst ī ŷ est partys, and there sang furst Masse ; and after cā to Antioch, wher he prechid and taryed .vii. yere, and after ŷ cam to Rome.

¶ Seynt Andrew, broder to Seynt Peter, was furst dysciple to Seynt John Baptyst, and after one of ŷ appostels of Cryst. He went in to Grece, and prechyd ŷ gospellis ; and ther cōuertyd mich people. But after, he was martyryd by one Egyas.

¶ **Johñ** the Euangelest was cosyn to Cryst. He went in to Ynde, and ther cōuertyd mych people; and after was brought to Rome, by the cōmandment of Domycyā, and put in to a vessell of boylyng oyle, and cam out without hurt; and from thens was banysshid in to ŷ yle of Patmose, wher he wrot the Appocalypse.

¶ **Jamis** the More, broder to Seynt Johñ the Euangelyst, went in to Spayn, and ther prechyd; and after cam agayne in to Jury, and there was hedyd by Herod.

¶ **Thomas** prechid to ŷ Parthes and Medes, and after wēt ī to Īde, wher he was martirid, and slayn with spers.

¶ **Jamis** ŷ Lasse. He was furst bysshop of Jherusalem, where he was cast downe frō ŷ top of ŷ tēple to ŷ grownd, and so was martyryd, and dyed.

¶ **Phylpp** prechyd in Scythie, and cōuertyd allmost all the cō-trey; and after was crucyfied.

¶ **Bartholomew** was neuew to ŷ kyng of Syrye. He prechyd in Lychane and Ynde, and after came in to Albane, a cyte in Armonye, and ther cōuertyd ŷ kīg, ŷ quene, and .xii. cytes in ŷ cōtrei. But after, he was takyn by Astiagius, the kyngis broder, which made hym to be fleyd quik, and after smot of his hed.

¶ **Mathew**, Appostell and Euāgelist. He wrot ŷ gospell ī Hebrew tōg. He prechid ī Egipt; and at ŷ last was hedid.

¶ **Symō** was cosī to Crist. He was chosī bisshop of Jherusalē by ŷ appostelles, after ŷ deth of Seīt James the Lesse, where he was crucyfied, when he was .C.xx. yere of age.

¶ **Judas Caddeus.** He prechyd ī ſy cyte of Edyssa; and after in Mesopotonya; and after was slayne, ī Armonye.

¶ **Mathye,** after ſy ascēciō of Cryst, was chosī appostell, in the stede of Iudas Skariot. He prechyd in Jury; but ſy Jues stonid hym to deth, and after smote of his hed.



¶ **Seynt Peter** the appostell, born ī Galely, cā to Rome, ſy secōd yere of ſy reyne of ſy ēperoure Claudius, and ſy yere frō the birth of Jhesu Criste .xliiii. wher he held the se .xxv. yere frō ſy tyme of Claudius to the tyme of the ēperour Nero, which put to deth both hym and Seīt Paul. But Seīt Peter, in his lyfe, constitutyd S. Lyne, S. Clete, and S. Clement, byshoppis; and euery one of them succedyd hym in the see.

¶ **Lyne** hyld the see nexte .xi. yere and .iii. monythis, in the tyme of Nero, Galba, Otta, Vittellius, and Vespacian, and was heddyd by Saturnius, consule.

¶ **Clete,** a Romaine, was nexte made pope: the yere of Cryst .lxxxi. He helde the see .xii. yere, in the tyme of Tytus and Domitian, whiche dyde put hym to deth.

¶ **Clemente,** a Romaine, was nexte made pope: the yere of Cryst .xCiiii. and helde the see .ix. yere and .ii. monthes, and in the tyme of Nerua and Troian, and then was martred.

¶ **Anaclete,** a Greke, helde the see in the tyme of Troyan, but the storyes make no mencyon howe longe, and was martyred.

¶ **Euaryst,** a Greke, helde the see .ix. yere and .x. monethes, in

the tyme of Troyan. He ordeyned þ̄ clerkes sholde were no berde, nor longe here; and after was martyred.

¶ **Alexander**, a Romaine, helde the see .x. yere and .vii. monethes, from the tyme of Troyan vnto the tyme of Adryan, vnder whom he was martyred.

¶ **Syrxt**, a Romaine, was next pope: þ̄ yere of Cryste .C.xxi. He helde the see .x. yere and more, in the tyme of Adrian, vnder whom he was martyred.

¶ **Chelesphore**, a Greke, was next made pope: the yere of Cryste .C.xxxi. He held the see .xi. yere and .iii. monethis. He orderid the tyme of Lent to be fast; and that, at Cristenmas, a preest shulde sing .iii. masses; and also orderid þ̄ Gloria in Exelcis shulde be song at mas. He sufferid marterdome vnder Anthonius.

¶ **Higenie**, a Greke, held the see .iiii. yere. He ordeynyd god-faders and godmoders; and after was martyrd.

¶ **Pius**, ā Italyō, helde the see .xi. yere. He orderyd Ester to be hallowid on the Sōday; and also that who so euer vsurpid þ̄ gooddis of þ̄ church, shuld be banishid for sacralagie. He was martirid by Æthonius.

¶ **Ancyet**, a Syryā, helde the see .x. yere, and was martyred by Anthonius Marcus.

¶ **Sother**, born at Campayn, held the see .ix. yere. He ordeynid mariage to be opinly solemnised; and after was martired.

¶ **Cluter**, a Greke, was nexte pope: the yere of Crist .C.lxxvii. He hild the see .xv. yere, and was martirid.

¶ **Victor** hild ȳ se .x. yere, ī ȳ time of Anthonius Comodus, Helie Pertinax, Juliā, and Seuerus, ēperours; and was martird.

¶ **Zepherin**, a Romayn, hild the see .xvii. yere. He ordeynid that euery man and woman, of .xiiii. yere, shuld receyue, at Ester, the body of Crist consecrate.

¶ **Calixte** was next made pope: the yere of Crist .CCxxi. He held ȳ se .vi. yere, and after was martired.

¶ **Urban**, a Romayn, helde the see next, .viii. yere, and was martired.

¶ **Pōcion**, a Romayn, held the see next, .v. yere. He was put to exyle, in to ȳ yle of Sardeyn, where he died.

¶ **Anther**, a Greke, hild the see .ii. yere.

¶ **fabian**, a Romayn, was next pope: the yere of Cryst .CCxl. He helde ȳ see .xiiii. yere. He ordeynyd that holy creme shuld be yerely renewd, and that no cristen man shuld mary with in .v. degrees of kynred. He was martyryd by Decius, emperour.

¶ **Cornelle**, a Romaine, was next pope: the yere of Crist .CCliij. He held the see .ij. yere, and more, and was martyryd vnder Gallus, emperoure.

¶ **Lucius**, a Romayn, was next pope, and helde the see .iiii. yere.

¶ **Stephen** held the see .iii. yere, and was martirid by ȳ ēperour Valerian and Galiē. He ordeynyd that non shuld were ȳ vestementis of the church but in time of deuyne seruyce.

¶ **Syxt** was nexte pope, and helde the see .ii. yere, and was martyryd by ȳ ēperour Galyē.

¶ **Denys** was next made pope: the yere of Cryst .CC.lxvi. He was the fyrst mōk ŷ euer was pope, and was martyryd.

¶ **Felyx**, a Romain, held the see .iiii. yere. He ordeynyd that no masse shuld be song but in holy placis, and was martyryd.

¶ **Euthichian**, a Tusque, hyld the se one yere, and was martyryd.

¶ **Cayus**, an Almayn, held the se .xi. yere. He ordeynyd holy orders of presthod: as furst to be benet, and after colet, then subdeacon, deacon, and then preest; and after was martyryd.

¶ **Mercellyn**, a Romain, hyld the see .ix. yere, and was martyryd vnder Dyoclysyan and Maxymian.

¶ **Mercil**, a Romain, was next pope: the yere of Cryst .CC.xCvij. He held the see .v. yere. He ordeynyd ŷ euery mā myght apele to the se appostolicall; also he ordeynyd ŷ no clerk shuld be callid to āswere before a ley juge. He was martired vnder Maxence.

¶ **Eusebe**, a Greke, helde the se .vi. yere. In his time ŷ holy crosse was found by Seynt Helene; wherfore he ordeynid the day of the inuencion of that holy crosse to be hallowid.



¶ **Melchisedech**, born in Affrik, was pope: the yere of Cryst .CCC.ix. He hild the se .iiii. yere. He ordeynid that none shuld fast vppon the Son-day; and was martyred vnder Galeryus and Maxymianus.

¶ **Syluester** the Furst, a Romain born, was next pope. He hyld the see .xxiii. yere. He ordeynyd ŷ fyrst of ŷ .iiii. generall councels in ŷ cyte of Nycee agāst the Ariēs.

¶ **Mark**, a Romayn, hyld the see .ii. yere, in the time of Con-
stātyne the Graūt.

¶ **Julius**, a Romayn, was next pope : the yere of Cryst .CCC.xxxix.
and hild the see .xv. yere. Vnder hym was the creacion of the pro-
tonotarys.

¶ **Liberius**, a Romayn, hild the see .vi. yere ; and, after some .x.
yere, this Lyberius became an herityke, of the sekt of Arientes.

¶ **Felix**, a Romayn, hild the see .i. yere, and more. He sufferyd
martirdome by the Aryēs ; but Seynt Jerome puttith not him in the
number of popis.

¶ **Damase**, a Spanyard, was pope the yere of Cryst .CCC.lxxviii.
and hyld the se .xix. yere. In hys tyme was the secōd generall coun-
cell in the cite of Cōstātinople. He approuid .x. werkis of Saynt
Jerome.

¶ **Siricius**, a Romaine, held the se .xvi. yere.

¶ **Anastace**, a Romaine, held ſ see .iiij. yere. He ordeynid ſ men
shuld stād while ſ gospel was reding.

¶ **Innocent**, borne at Albanie, hyld ſ see .xv. yere. He ordeynid
pax to be born at mas.

¶ **Zorinus**, a Greke, was nexte pope : the yere of Cryst .CCCC.xx.
He helde the see one yere. In his tyme Pharamound began to reyne
in Fraunce.

¶ **Boniface**, a Romaine, helde the see .ij. yere. In his tyme
Saynt Jerome dyed.

¶ **Celestine**, a Romaine, borne in Cāpayne, was pope the yere of Cryst .CCCC.xxv. and helde the see .ix. yere. In his tyme, the .iii. generall counsaile was kepte in the cyte of Ephese, agaynst the Nestoryens and the Pellagiens, heretykes ; at whiche counsaile there were .CC. bysshoppes.

¶ **Syrte**, a Romaine, was made pope ŷ yere of Cryst .cccc.xiiii. and helde the see .viii. yere.

¶ **Leo**, a Tusque, was next pope: ŷ yere of Cryst .CCCC.xlij. He held ŷ see .xxi. yeris. In his tyme was the .iiij. generall coūsell in the cite of Calcidone. He ordeynyd that, in tyme of nede, euery mā myght baptise ; and ordeynyd ŷ Alleluya shuld not be sōg nor seyde in Lent, nor Gloria in excelsis.

¶ **Hillari**, born in Sardayn, was pope ŷ yere of Cryst .iiii.C.lxiiii. He held ŷ see .vii. yere. He ordeynyd that the bysshoppys shuld not chose theyr successours.

¶ **Simplicius**, born at Tyburce, was next pope: the yere of Cryst .iiii.C.lxx. He held the see .v. yere.

¶ **Felix**, a Romayn born, was next pope. He held the see .ix. yere.

¶ **Gelase**, borne in Affryk, was next pope: the yere of Cryst .iiii.C.xc.iiii. He ordeynyd that a Bygamus shuld not reseue holy orders, and also that orders shulde be geuyn .iiii. tymys in a yere, and vpon the Saterdag. He hylde the see .iiii. yere.

¶ **Anastase** was next pope. He hyld the see .ii. yere, and more.

¶ **Symachus** was next pope. He hyld the see .xv. yere.

¶ **Hormisida**, born at Chāpayn, was next pope: the yere of Cryst .v.C.xvii. He held the see .ix. yere, and more.

¶ **Johñ**, a Tusque, was next. He held ŷ see .ii. yere. He dyed prisoner in the cyte of Rauēs, for ŷ crystē fayth.

¶ **Felix Samien** was next, and held the see .iiii. yere and more. He fōūdid ŷ church of Cosme and Danyā, at Rome.

¶ **Boniface**, a Romain, was next pope: the yere of Cryst .v.C.xxxiiii. and helde the see .i. yere and more.

¶ **Johan**, a Romain, held the see next .ii. yere.

¶ **Agapyt**, a Romain, was next pope: ŷ yere of Cryst .v.C.xxxvii. Thē was ŷ .v. general councell in Cōstātinople, wher the emperoure Justynyan was conuertyd to the crystyn fayth. He ordenyd to haue processyon euery Sondaye.

¶ **Syluester**, born in Campayn, was pope next: the yere of Cryst .v.C.xxxviii. He held the see one yere.

¶ **Uigilius**, a Romain, hyld ŷ see next, .xvii. yere and more. He was exyld by Belyzare, lieutenant to Justiniā, in to the yle of Pontus, where he dyed.

¶ **Pelagius**, a Romaine, was nexte pope: ŷ yere of Cryst .v.C.liiii. He held the see .xi. yere.

¶ **Johñ**, a Romain, was next pope: the yere of Cryst .v.C.lxiiii. He held the see .xiii. yere.

¶ **Benet**, a Romain, held the see next .iiii. yere, and more.

¶ **Delagius**, a Romayn, hyld the see next .x. yere and more. He ordeynyd that clerkys in holy orders shulde sey dayly the .vii. hourys canonicall.

¶ **Gregory** the Graūt, a Romayn, was next pope: ŷ yere of Cryst .v.C.xCi. ; and held the se .xiii. yere, and more. He cōfirmyd ŷ .iiii. grete cōselles .s. of Nycee, Cōstantynoble, Ephese, and Calsidonie. This Gregory is one of the .iiii. doctors of the chyrch. He sent Seynt Austen in to Brytteyn, which cōuertyd ŷ people to Crystis feyth. This Gregory made dyuers holy omelyes, anthemys, hymnys, responses, more than any other pope. He causyd all the heddys of all the ydolis in Rome to be smytten of. Also he was the furst pope that causyd hym selff to be callyd, in his style, the seruant of the seruantis of God.

¶ **Sabynian** was next pope: the yere of Cryst .vi.C.vi. He held the see one yere.

¶ **Bonyface**, born a Romayn, held the see next .ix. monethis.

¶ **Bonyface**, born in Marse, held ŷ see next .vi. yere. He ordeynyd the fest of All Seyntis.

¶ **Deus Dedit**, a Romayn, was next pope: the yere of Crist .vi.C.xiiii. He held the see .iii. yere.

¶ **Boniface**, borne in Champayne, helde the see nexte .v. yere.

¶ **Honore**, borne in Champayne, held the se next .xiii. yere.

¶ **Seueryne**, a Romayn, was next pope: the yere of Cryst .vi.C.xxxv. He held ŷ see one yere.

¶ **Johñ Dalmate** held the see next .ii. yere and more.

- ¶ Theodore, a Greek, held the see next .vi. yere and more.
- ¶ Martyne Tudertyn held the see next .vi. yere and more.
- ¶ Eugenie, a Romain, was next pope: the yere of Cryst .vi.C.l.iiii. He held the see .ix. yere and more.
- ¶ Vitalion held the see next .xiiii. yere.
- ¶ Adeodotus, a Romain, held the see next .xiiii. yere.
- ¶ Donus, a Romain, held the see next .v. yere.
- ¶ Agaton, borne in Secyl, was next pope: the yere of Cryst .vi.C.lxxxi. He hyld the see .ii. yere, and more.
- ¶ Leo, borne in Secyle, hyld the see .x. monthis.
- ¶ Benet, a Romain, hyld the see next .vi. monthis.
- ¶ Iohn̄, Siryan, hyld the see next, one yere.
- ¶ Conon, born in Trace, hyld the see nexte, one monyth.
- ¶ Sergius, borne at Antioch, was next pope: the yere of Cryste .vi.C.lxxxvii. He hyld the see one yere, and more.
- ¶ Iohn̄, a Greke, hyld the se next .iii. yere, and more.
- ¶ Iohn̄, a Greke, hyld the se next .ii. yere and more.
- ¶ Sosinus, of Siria, hyld the se next .xx. days. In his tyme was made the furst duke of Venes, callid Paulus Lucius.

¶ **Constantyne**, of Siria, was next pope; the yere of Cryst .vii.C.vi. He held the see .vii. yere. He crystenyd .ii. kyngis of Saxons, which were at Rome, and after went home, and becam relygyous men.

¶ **Gregory**, a Romain, held the see next .xvii. yere. By his meanys ſ̄ Germainys were cōuertyd to Cristes feyth. He cursyd the ēperour Leo, becaus he worshyppyd fals goddys.

¶ **Gregory**, a Sirien, was next pope: the yere of Cryste .vii.C.xxx. He held the see .x. yere, and more.

¶ **Zachary**, a Greke, was next pope: the yere of Cryst .vii.C.xli. He helde the see .x. yere.

¶ **Stephen**, a Romaine, hyld the see next .v. yere.

¶ **Pall**, a Romain, held the see next .x. yere.

¶ **Stephē**, of Secile, was next pope: the yere of Cryst .vii.C.lxvii.

¶ **Adryā**, a Romain, held the see next .xxiii. yere and more. He was persecutyd by Desederius, kyng of Lumberdy, and, for eyd, fled to Charles, kyng of Fraūce; the which Charles subdewyd the seyd Desederyus.

¶ **Leo**, a Romain, was next pope: the yere of Cryst .vii.C.xcv. He crownyd Charlmayn emperour, and declaryd Pepyn, son to Charles, kyng of Italy. He held the see .xxi. yere.

¶ **Stephē**, a Romain, hyld ſ̄ see next .vii. mōthys. He crounyd Lewes Debonayr ēperour and kīg of Fraūce.

¶ **Pascale**, a Romain, was next pope: the yere of Cryst .viii.C.xvi. He held the see .vii. yere and more. He ordeynyd that no clerkis shuld obteyn benefices of lay men.

¶ **Eugenie**, a Romain, hyld the see next .iiii. yere and more. He was martyrid, and his eyes put out by the Romainys, that hatyd hym.

¶ **Valentyne**, a Romain, hyld the see next .xl. days.

¶ **Gregory**, a Romain, was next pope: the yere of Cryst .viii.C.xxvii. He held the see .x. yere.

¶ **Sergius** the Second, a Roman, hyld the see next .iii. yere. He was the furst that changyd his name at his creacion, for before, his name was Groyng, and than wold be callyd Sergius.

¶ **Leo**, a Roman, hyld the see next .viii. yere and more. He was so holy a man that, by his prayer to our Lady, he chasyd a serpent, a cokatryce, from the furnase of Seynt Lucine, of whos smell mych people dyed, and therefore he comaūdyd the *vtas* of the assūpcion to be halowyd.

¶ **John Anglos**, born at Magunce, beyng a womā so profited in lernyng in the vniuersite of Athenis, feynid her selfe to be a mā, and cā to Rome, and was chosin pope: ŷ yere of Cryst .viii.C.lv.; and hild the see .ii. yere.

¶ **Benet**, a Romain, hyld the see next .ii. yere and more.

¶ **Nycolas**, a Romain, hild the see next .vii. yere. He ordeynyd that no laye man myght take goodys parteynyng to a preste.

¶ **Adryan**, a Romaine, hyld the see next .v. yere and more.

¶ **Johan**, a Romain, was next pope : the yere of Cryst .viii.C.lxxiii. He toke part with Charlis the Bald and Lews the Stutter, agayns Charlys and Charlomā, chyldren of Lewys, kīg of Germanyn. He ordeynyd, at a cōsell at Troys, that who so euer were a morderar shuld be irriguler, and vnable to receyue holy orders.

¶ **Martyn**, borne in Fraunce, hyld the se next, one yere and more.

¶ **Adrian**, a Romain, hyld the see next one yere. He ordenid that the emperour, from thens forth, shuld not medyll in the eleccion of the popis, but only the clergy.

¶ **Stephen**, a Romaine, held the see next .vi. yere: the yere of Cryste .viii.C.lxxxvi.

¶ **Formose**, a Parauāt, hyld the see next .v. yere and more.

¶ **Bonyface** helde the see next .xxvi. dayes.

¶ **Stephen** held the see a yere and more.

¶ **Romaine**, a Spanyard, held the see next .iii. monythis.

¶ **Theodore**, a Romain, helde the see next .xx. days.

¶ **Johñ**, a Romain, held the see next .ii. yere.

¶ **Benet**, a Romain, was next pope : the yere of Cryst .ix.C.ii. He held the see .iii. yere and more.

¶ **Leo Aretius**, hyld the see next .lx. dayes ; but he was taken by Crystofer, a connyng preest, whych was desyrrouse to be pope, and kept in a toure tyll he dyed.

¶ **Crystofer**, whych kept the seyd Leo in prison, was then next pope, by vsurpacyon, .vi. monethys; but he was depriuuyd from his see, and Sergius, the next pope, succedyng, put hym in perpetuall pryson.

¶ **Sergius**, a Romain, was than next pope: the yere of Cryst .ix.C.vi. He causyd pope Formose his body to be taken out of his graue, and smote of his hed, and adnullyd all his actis; allegyng that he had conspyryd agaīs pope Jhon̄.

¶ **Anastace**, a Romain, was next pope: the yere of Cryst .ix.C.xiii. He hyld the see .ii. yere.

¶ **Lando**, of Sabye, hyld the see next .vi. monethys.

¶ **John̄**, a Romain, hyld the see next .xiii. yere.

¶ **Leo**, a Romain, hyld the see next .vii. monethys.

¶ **Stephen** hyld the see next .ii. yere.

¶ **John̄**, a Romain, hyld the see next .iii. yere.

¶ **Leo**, a Romain, hyld the see .iii. yere and more.

¶ **Stephen**, a Romaine, hyld the see next .iii. yere.

¶ **Martyn** hyld the see next .iii. yere and more.

¶ **Agapyt** hyld the see next .x. yere.

¶ **John**, a Romain, hyld the see next .ix. yere.

¶ **Benet**, a Romain, was next pope: ȝ yere of Cryste .ix.C.lxii.

ȝ emperour Otton, for varyance betwen them, banyssyd hym in to Italye.

¶ **Leo**, a Romain, hyld the see next .i. yere and more.

¶ **Johñ**, a Romain, hyld the see next .vi. yere and more.

¶ **Benet**, a Romain, hyld the see next .i. yere and more, tyl that one Cyntheus, a cytezyn of Rome, put hym in preson, in the castell Angell, where he dyed for hunger.

¶ **Donus**, a Romain, hyld the see next .i. yere.

¶ **Boniface** was next pope: the yeer of Cryste .ix.C.lxxv. He obteynyd the papacye by euyll ways, and robbyd and spoyld the tresure of the church; and after dyed wrechydly.

¶ **Benet**, a Romain, hyld the see next .viii. yere and .vi. monethys.

¶ **Johñ**, a Romain, heeld the see next .iii. monethis. He dyed for hunger, in castell Angell.

¶ **Johñ**, a Romain, heeld the see .vi. monethis. He was hatyd of all folk. He dyd noughte but made his kyn ryche of the goodys of the church.

¶ **Johñ**, a Romain, was nexte pope: the yere of Cryste .x.C.lxxxiii. He helde the see .x. yere and more.

¶ **Gregory** was next pope. He helde the see .ii. yere and more. He was nygh cosyn to Otton, the .iii. ēperour. He ordenyd ȝ ȝ emperour shulde be chosen by .vii. pryncis of Almayne; whych is obserued to this day.

¶ **John**, that was byshop of Pleasaunce, helde the see .x. monethis.

¶ **Silvester**, borne in Fraūce, was next pope: the yeer of Cryste .ix.C.xcvii. By art magyk and the deuелles craft, he demaundyd of the deuyll how long he shuld lyue; which answeyrd hym, that he shuld syng in Jerusalem before; and so he sang in the chapell callyd Jerusalem, in Rome, and anon after dyed; but, in tyme of his deth, knolegyd his synnys.

¶ **John** was next pope: the yere of Cryste .M.i. He held the see .iiii. monythis and more. He ordeynyd that ſ dyryge shuld be song yerely, in the euyн of All Seyntis.

¶ **John**, a Romain, was next pope: the yere of Cryste .M.i. He held the see .iiii. yere and more.

¶ **Sergys**, a Romain, hyld the see next .ii. yere.

¶ **Benet**, of Tusque, hyld the see next .xi. yere. In his tyme Jherusalem was takyn by the Sarasyns, and the sepulcre of Cryste distroyd.

¶ **John**, a Romain, was next pope: the yere of Cryst .M.xxi. He held the see .xi. yere and more.

¶ **Benet**, a Tusque, was next pope: the yere of Cryst .M.xxxii. He held the see .x. yere and more. He was an euyл man. He was put downe therfore from his pontyfycacy; but after he was remytted agayn.

¶ **Silvester**, a Romain, was pope the yeer of Cryst .M.xxxix and hyld the see but .xl. days, for then Benet was chosin agayn.

- **Gregory**, a Romain, was next pope: the yeer of Cryst .M.xlv.
- **Clement** was next pope: the yere of Cryst .M.xlvii.
- **Damasse** hyld the see next .xxiii. days.
- **Leo** hyld the see next .ii. monythis.
- **Victor** hyld the see next .iii. yere and more.
- **Stephen**, born at Loreyne, was nexte pope: the yere of Cryste .M.lvi. He hyld the see .vii. monethis.
- **Benet**, a Romain, hild the see next .ix. monethis; but he was deposyd, because he obteynyd the see by strenght and force.
- **Nycholas**, born at Sauoy, was next. He crownyd Henry the .iiii. emperour.
- **Alexander** was next pope: the yere of Crist .M.lxi. He hyld the see .xi. yere.
- **Gregory** was nexte pope: the yere of Cryst .M.lxxiii. He declaryd Henry the .iiii. emperour accursed, for promotynge of benefices by symony. He hylde the see .xii. yere and more.
- **Victor** was nexte pope. He contynued the sentence agayns Henry the emperour; but he was impoysoned by venym put in his chales, after that he had be pope one yere.
- **Urban** was nexte pope: the yere of Chryst .M.lxxxviii. He hylde the see .xii. yere and more. Vnder hym was determyned the

voyage to Jerusalem, by Godfrey de Boleyn, and other chrysten men, whiche wanne the cite of Jerusalem.

¶ **Pascall** was nexte pope: the yere of Chryst .M.C. He hylde the see .xviii. yere and more.

¶ **Gelase** was nexte pope. He hylde the see one yere.

¶ **Calyste** was nexte pope. He hylde the see .v. yere and more.

¶ **Honore** was nexte pope. He hylde the see .v. yere.

¶ **Innocent** was nexte pope: the yere of Chryst .M.C.xxx. He made the lawe ſ̄ none shulde ley no violent hande vpon a clerke, payne of cursynge; and he hylde the see .xiiij. yere.

¶ **Celestyne** was nexte pope. He hylde the see .v. monethes.

¶ **Lucius** was nexte pope. He hylde the see one monethe.

¶ **Eugene** was nexte pope. He hylde the see .viii. yere and more.

¶ **Anastase** was nexte pope: he hylde the see one yere.

¶ **Adryan**, an Englysshe man, was next pope: ſ̄ yere of Chryst .M.C.liiii. He hylde ſ̄ see .iiii. yere.

¶ **Alexander** was nexte pope. He hylde the see .xxi. yere; but parte of the eleccyon dyd chose one Victor, whiche was called the Antepape, and was mayntayned by the emperour Fredrycke; but yet peace was made betwene them.

¶ **Lucius** was nexte pope. He hylde the see .iiii. yeres.

¶ **Urban** was next pope. In his tyme Jerusalē was won by ſ Sarazyns. He hylde the see .ii. yere.

¶ **Gregory** was nexte pope. He hylde the see .viii. wekes.

¶ **Clement** was nexte pope: the yere of Chryst .M.C.lxxxvii. He hylde the see .iii. yere and more.

¶ **Celestyne** was nexte pope. He hylde the see .vii. yere.

¶ **Innocent** was nexte pope: the yere of Chryst .M.C.xCviii. In his tyme lyued Saynt Fraunces and Saynt Dominycke, fyrst begynners of those orders. He hylde the see .xviii. yere.

¶ **Honore** was nexte pope: the yere of Chryst .M.CC.xvi. He hylde the see .x. yere and more.

¶ **Gregory** hylde the see nexte .xiii. yere.

¶ **Celestyne** hylde the see nexte .xviii. dayes.

¶ **Innocent** was next pope: he hylde ſ see .xi. yeere.

¶ **Alexander** hylde the see nexte .vii. yere.

¶ **Urban** was nexte pope: he hylde the see .iii. yere and more.

¶ **Clemente** was nexte pope: he hylde the see .iii. yere.

¶ **Gregory** was nexte pope: the yere of Chryst .M.CC.lxxi. He hylde the see .iiii. yeres.

¶ **Innocent** hylde the see nexte .vi. monethes.

¶ **Adryan** hylde the see nexte .xxxix. dayes.

¶ **Johñ** hylde the see nexte .viii. monthes.

¶ **Nicholas** was nexte pope: he hylde the see .iii. yeres and more.

¶ **Martyn** was nexte pope. He hylde the see .iiii. yeres. He accursed the kynge of Arregon, and toke vpon hym to gyue that realme to whome so euer wolde conquere it.

¶ **Honore** was nexte pope: the yere of Chryst .M.CC.lxxxv. He hylde the see .ii. yeres.

¶ **Nicholas** hylde the see nexte .iiii. yeres.

¶ **Celestyne** hylde the see nexte .vi. monethes.

¶ **Bonyface** hylde the see nexte .viii. yere. He caused Celestyne to resygne his company to hym by fraude; and after lyued lyke a lyon, and dyed lyke a dodge.

¶ **Benedicte** was nexte pope: the yere of Chryst .M.CCC.iii. He hylde the see .ix. monethes.

¶ **Clement** was nexte pope. He hylde the see in Auinyon, .viii. yere and more.

¶ **Johñ** was nexte pope. He hylde the see in Auinyon .xix. yere.

¶ **Benedicte** was next pope: ȝ yere of Christ .M.CCC.xxxiiii. He hylde ȝ see in Auinyon .vii. yere.

¶ **Clement** hylde the see nexte .xi. yere. He ordayne that the Jubely shulde be euery .l. yere.

¶ **Innocent** was nexte pope. He hylde the see in Auinyon .x. yere.

¶ **Urban** was next pope: the yere of Christ .M.CCC.lxiii. In his tyme were founde the hedes of Saynt Peter and Poule.

¶ **Gregory** hylde the see nexte .vii. yeres. He remoued his hole court from Auinyon to Rome.

¶ **Urban** was nexte pope: the yere of Chryst .M.CCC.lxxviii. He hylde the see .xi. yere.

¶ **Bonyface** was nexte pope. He hylde the see .xiii. yere.

¶ **Innocent** was nexte pope: the yere of Chryst .M.CCCC.iiii. He hylde the see .ii. yere.

¶ **Gregory** was nexte pope; but he was depoyd.

¶ **Alexander** was nexte pope. He hylde the see one monthe.

¶ **John** was nexte pope: the yere of Chryst .M.CCCC.x. He hylde the see .x. yere and more, and was depoyd at the counsell of Constaunce.

¶ **Martyn** was nexte pope. He hylde the see .xiii. yere.

¶ **Eugeny** was nexte pope: the yere of Chryst .M.iiii.C.xxxi. He hylde the see .xvi. yere; and there was a varyaunce betwene hym and the duke of Sauoy who shulde be pope; whiche duke at the last was admytted at the counsell of Bassel, and called Felyx.

¶ **Nicholas** was nexte pope; for Felix resygned to him. He hylde the see .viii. yere.

¶ **Calexte** was nexte pope. He hylde the see .iii. yere and more. In his tyme the chrysten men had a great victorie agaynst the Turkes in Hungarye.

¶ **Pius** was nexte pope: the yere of Chryst .M.CCCC.lviii. He hylde the see .vi. yere.

¶ **Paulus** was nexte pope. He hylde the see .vi. yere.

¶ **Sextus** was nexte pope. He hylde the see .xiii. yere.

¶ **Innocent** was nexte pope: the yere of Chryst .M.CCCC.lxxxiiii. He hylde the see .viii. yere.

Flemish History.

The Lyne of Cicambers.

¶ **Frācus**, or Frāciō, sō of Hector, of Troy, as the Frēchmen hold oppynyon, after the distroccyō of Troy, cam in to Gallia, and maryed the dougter of Remus, kyng of Gallia. As some wryters affyrme, he byldyd the great cyte of Cicambria, after the name of Cicābria, his great awnt, which was suster to Priamus, kyng of Troye, and had a son callyd Cicamber.

¶ **Cicamber**, son to Francus, was next kyng of the Cycambers, and some sey that he byldyd the seyd cyte of Cicambria, and namyd it after his name.

¶ **Pryam**, after the deth of Cicamber, was next kyng of Cicambres, after whō succedyd one Hector and other, as the lyne and petegre a boue shewyth, as the Frenchmen hold oppynyon.

The hystories speke but lytyll of the heyris of Francyon vnto the tyme of Magius.

¶ **Magius** was kyng of Cicambers, or Cymbers, Belgyens, and Tongers.

Thys Magius byldyd a castell betwene the ryuers of Ryne and Meuze, and had a sōne callyd Menapius.

¶ **Menapius**, sō to Magius, had issue .iiii. sōnys, Leo, Godfrey, Theutonium, and Clodyak. Theutonium and Clodyak made war agaynst the Romainys, and slew of the nobles at a batteyll .xx.M. and .lx.M. of the cōmyns, so that non escapyd away but six persons, which bare thythngis to Rome. But after that, the Romainys made a new power agaynst the Cycambers, or Cymbers, and had victory, and slewe of the Cymbers C.xl.M. people, wher Theuthonius was slayn, and Clodyak takyn prysoner; and so the Cymbers and theyr name were dystroyd. But after that Leo dyed, and Godfrey remaynyd styll kyng of Tongres.

¶ **Godfrey**, son to Menapius, was than sole kyng of Tongres, aft̃r̃ ſ̃ deth of his brethren Leo and Theutonicus, and lyffyd ī grete heuy-nes ī his castel, vppō ſ̃ riuer of Ryne, and payd yerly a raūsō to Rome, to saue his broder Clodiak his lyfe, ſ̃ was there prisoner.

¶ **Charles Inach** departid frō his fader Godfrey īto Archadia, and ther liuid ī warres vnder Lucius Julius, cōsull.

¶ **Swayn**, dought̃r to Charles Inach, and to ō Swayn, sist̃r to Julius Cesar, was married to on Saluius Brabā, to whō Julius gafe ſ̃ cōtreyn of Brabā, by whō it toke furst ſ̃ name. And so this Saluius was furst duke of Brabā.

¶ **Charlis Brabā**, sō to Saluius and to Swayne, was duke of Tōgres and secōd duke of Brabā .xlvi. yere before ſ̃ byrth of Cryste. He married ſ̃ doughter of Epitogrus, duke of Turynge, and succedyd hym as duke.

¶ **Julius**, eldyst sō to Charlis Brabā, was, after his fader, duke of Tōgers and Brabā, ī ŷ .lvii. yer after ŷ birth of Crist. A senatour of Rome, callid Anthonie, with his cōpaniō, callid Granus, for fere of Nero, ŷ ēperour, fled to this Julius for help, which gaue thē and theyr people a place callid Hollād, wher they bildyd a strōg place, and namyd hit Āthonia, after callyd Wyltēbourg, and now callyd Vtreth; and after, they wēt with theyr people ī to ŷ forest of Ardeyn, and there bildid a godly palis, which is callid at this day, ī Latē, Aqs-granū, which is ŷ cyte of Acō, where ŷ emperour now taketh his fyrst crowne.

¶ **Octavius**, sone of Julyus, was, after his fader, duke of Tongres and Brabande. He kepte lege with the Romayns; wherfore ŷ emperour Troiane made hym gouvernour of Gall Belgik. In his tyme, Saynt Martyn cōuerted to ŷ fayth of Cryst the cytees of Cōllen and Tongres.

¶ **Godardus**, sonne to Octavius, was, after his father, duke of Tongres and Brabād: ŷ yere of Cryste .C.xl. He was gouvernour of Gall Belgyk, by ŷ Romayns, as his fader was before.

¶ **Godfray**, sone of Godard, was duke of Tōgres and Brabād, after his fader. He eydyd the ēperour Marcus Ātonius agaīst ŷ Germaīs; but after, because ŷ ēperour Cōmodus slew a neuw of his, a child that was in hostage at Rome, he brake lege with ŷ Romeyns, ioyned with the Germayns. This Godfray maryed ŷ doughter of Werik, ducke of Treues; and they so alyed to gyder, had all Gall Belgik vnder theyr dominion by the space of .xii. yere, without ony trybute paynge to the Romans.

¶ **Werik**, sonn of Godfrey, was, after his fader, duke of Tongres and Braband. He lyuyd .C. yere. But when he was old he left the gouerment of his landys to his son Artford.

¶ **Artsard**, son of Weryk, was, after his fader, duke of Tongres and Braband, in the tyme of the emperour Maximian; and, because that one namid Carancius, lyuetenāūt to the emperour, dyd not gouerne well the prouynce, the seyd Artsard was put in hys rome; whych prouynce extendyd from the lordshyppe of Ryne vnto the Bryttayns see.

Also when the ēperour Constacyus was opressyd of the Allmayns about Langres, the sayd Artsard gaue vnto hym sych eyde, that at the last he had vycory; and because that Constācyus wold be the more stronger agaynst the Allmayns, he maryed Helene, doughter to Coyll, king of Bryttayn, and after besegyd the cytte of Treues; and therfore the sayd Artsard cōtynued great famylyaryte with the seyd ēperour.

¶ **Merciandus**, son of Artsard, was, after his fader, duke of Tongres and Brabād; and also had the gouernaūce of the prouynce by ŷ see cost for the emperours Romayens, and wan māny grete thingis for them, and specially in the lyfe of his fader, taking part with Constantine the Graunt agayns Maximian and Licinius, tirātis and vsurpatours of the ēpyre; becauwe whereof Merciadus, by priuelege imperiall, extēdid ŷ limetes of his gouernaūce thorow owt all the cūtreys of Heynault, Artoys, and Pycardy, and died after that he had be duke .xl. yere.

¶ **Carander**, sonn of Marciandus, was, after his father, duke of Tongres and Braband. He was norisshid in the court of Gracian emperour, which reynid the yere of Cryst .CCC.lxxxij. He was there accusyd by Eugenius Grāmaticus, and one Arbogastus; but yet, at the last, he was prouyd a good cristin man. But after, because of the troble he had in Gracians court, he toke parte wyth Maxymyan agaynst Gracian, and after ŷ was well in fauour with Theodose, emperour.

¶ **Ansigisus**, son to Taxāder, was, after his fader, duke of Tōgres and Braban. He was a good crysten prynce. He slew, in playne battayl, Grosius, kyng of Wandalys, which was ā ydolatour and a cruell tyrāt.

¶ **Charles la Bele**, sone of Ansigisus, was, after his fader, duke of Tongres and Brabant. He maryed the syster of the emperour Valentinian. He gouerned Gall Belgyk, vnder the Romainys, by the space of .xv. yere, and exorted ſ Romainys to sende Accius agaynst Attilia, kinge of Huns, whiche Attilia, kyng of Huns, was dyscomfet in Champayn, and his people sore minishid.

¶ **Lando**, son of Charlys le Bele, was next duke: ſ yere of Cryst .iiii.C.lx. He perseyuyng the Frenchmen to encrease theyre domynyōs, and the Romainys to dekey, toke part with Chelderyk, kyng of Fraūce, and seyde he cam of hys blood, that is to sey, of Sycamber, sonne of Francus.

¶ **Austrusius**, sonne of Lando, was, after hys fader, duke. He was welbelouyd wyth Chelderyk, kyng of Fraunce, and vnder him ruled Gall Belgyke, and of his name it was furst callyd Austrey.

¶ **Charlis Nasō**, sō to Astracius, was, after his fader, duke of Braban and Austrey. He married Woldbury, doughter to the duke of Turyng, wherby he was after duke of Turyng.

¶ **Charlys Haysbayn**, son to Charles Nason, was after duke of Tongres and Brabant and Austrey.

¶ **Karloman**, after the deth of Charlys, was duke of Braban.

¶ **Peppyn** the elder, sō to Karloman, was duke of Braban and

Austry, and also prynce of the palys of Fraūce. He had a sō callid Grymoald, and .ii. daughters, Begga and Geretrude, whych was a saynt. Thys Grymold dyed with out issue.

¶ **Ansīgises**, whych was son to Seynt Arnolde, was maryed to Begga, doughter to Pepyn, duke of Braban and Austry.

¶ **Pepyn**, son to Āsigises and Begga, was duke of Braband and Austry, and also prynce of ŷ palece of Fraūce.

¶ **Charles Mertell**, sō of Pepin, was, after his fader, duke of Austry, and prince of the palece of Fraunce. He was protektour to Theodor, the yong kynge of Fraunce, and deffendyd his land from enmys. In his tyme the Sarsyns enteryd the realme of Fraunce, with an innumerable peple, both men, women, and children; agaynst whom this Charlys Martell made a gret battayll, and slew of them, as some wryters affyrme, .iii.C.lxxv.M. Saresyns.

¶ **Luderyk**, borne in Germayne, was, by Charlmayn, made forester of Flaunders, and the contrey was callyd Flaunders after the name of his wife, callyd Flandrie.

¶ **Ingecanie** was, after Luderyk, his fader, forester of Flaunders .xv. yere, and lyeth at Harlebeke.

¶ **Andoquyer**, son to Ingecan, was, after his father, forester of Flanders.

¶ **Baldewyn**, son of Andoquyr, was, by the emperour Charlys the Bald, made the furst yerle of Flaun. He maryed Judyth, doughter to the seyde Charles.

¶ **Baldewyn the Bald**, sonne to Baldwyn, was the .ii. yerle of Flaūders. He lyffyd .xxxix. yere.

¶ **Arnold the Graunt**, son to Balldewyn the Balld, was the .iii. yerle of Flaunders. He lyeth at Gaunt.

¶ **Baldewyn**, sō of Arnold, was next yerle of Flanders. He lyth at Seīt Bartyns, in ſ town of Seīt Omer.

¶ **Arnold**, son of Baldewyn, was next yerle of Flaunders. He lyeth at Gaunt.

¶ **Baldewyn bele Barbe** was next yerle of Flaunders. He lyeth at Flaunders.

¶ **Baldewyn**, son to Baldewyn bele Barbe, born at Lysle, was next yerle of Flaunders. He lyeth at Lysle.

¶ **Baldewyn**, son to Baldewyn of Lysle, was next yerle of Flaunders. He lyeth in an abbay in Henon.

¶ **Arnold**, the son of Baldewyn, was next yerle of Flaunders. He lyeth at Seynt Bertynis.

¶ **Robert**, duke of Fryse, broder to Baldewyn, was next yerle of Flaunders. He lieth at Cassel.

¶ **Robert**, son to Robert, was next yerle of Flaunders. He lyeth at Seynt Vedast.

¶ **Baldewyn** was nexte erle of Flaunders.

¶ **Charles** was nexte erle of Flaunders. He was slayne by his people in Brugys.

¶ **Wylliam**, duke of Normandye, was nexte erle of Flaunders, by the ayde of the Frenche kyng.

¶ **Dedyre**, son to ŷ doughter of Robert, erle of Flaunders, was next erle of Flaunders.

¶ **Philyppe**, sonne to Dedyre, was nexte erle of Flaunders, and dyed without yssue.

¶ **Margaret**, syster to Philyppe, was maryed to Baldewyn, erle of Henaude, whiche was nexte erle of Flaunders.

¶ **Baldewyn**, sonne to Baldewyn, was nexte erle of Flaunders and emperour of Constantynople.

¶ **Ferrande**, son to the kyng of Portyngale, maryed to Johan, eldyst doughter to Baldewyn the emperour, was nexte erle of Flaunders.

¶ **Wylliam Dampeter**, maryed to Margaret, syster to Johanne, before countes of Flaunders, was nexte erle of Flaunders.

¶ **Guy**, son to Margaret, was nexte erle of Flaunders.

¶ **Robert**, son to Guy, countie of Flaunders, was nexte erle of Flaunders.

¶ **Lewys**, son of Lewys, son of Robert, after his grandefathers dethe, was nexte erle of Flaunders. He was slayne by the Englysshe-men, at the battell of Cressy.

¶ **Lewys**, called Lewys de Marle, was nexte erle of Flaunders.

¶ **John**, son to Philyppe, was nexte duke of Burgon and erle of Flaunders. He caused one of his seruantes to slee the duke of Orlyauce; but after that the sayd duke John was slayne.

¶ **Philyppe**, son to John, was nexte duke of Burgoyne.

¶ **Charles**, son to Philyppe, was nexte duke of Burgon. He had a doughter called Margarete, whiche was maryed to Maximilyan, that was electe emperour.

¶ **Maximilyan**, sonne of Fredrycke, the emperour, maryed Marye, onely doughter to Charles, duke of Burgon.

French History.



¶ **Fracus** the .ii. was the furst kīg of the Frēchmē, which was son to Ancharius, leder of the Cicābers, and discēdid of the aūcion line of Francus, son of Ector of Troy; which Cicābers, after that they forsoke the cyte of Cicāber, in Hongary, cam and dwelt nygh the Ryne, now callyd Gelders and Holland; therfor loke Julius Cesar his Comētaryes. He had many vycторыs agaīs ſ Romaīs and Gallis. He made a bryge ouer ſ waī of Meuze, and cā to Gallia, and slew aboue .l.M. peple. He forsook ſ name of Cicābers, and callid hī self kīg of Frēchmē. But yet some callyd thē Cicābers, some Germaīs, and some Frēchmē. This Frācus dyed aft he had reynid .xxviii. yeer. Look Hanibaldus.

¶ **Clogiō**, sō of Frācus, was next kīg of Frēchmē. He made war agayn Tiberius, ſ was aft ēperour, and causid hī to retorn toward Rome agayn without vycторы. In the .x. yere of his reyn, Jesu Cryst was born.

¶ **Herimerus**, sō to Clogyō, was next made kīg of Frenchmē, in ſ .xv. yere after ſ byrth of Cryste. In his time ſ Gallis made gret warr

agayns þ̅ Frenchmen, and distroyd mych of theyr cōtreȳ ; wherefore Herimerus gederyd a meruelous grete number of Frenchmen, and enteryd in to Gallya, and distroid þ̅ cōtreȳ, and made theyrlordes and dukis subiect to þ̅ Frenchmen. But yet, lastly, this Herymetus was sleyn in þ̅ seyð warris.

¶ **Marcomer**, broder to Herymerus, was next kīg of Frēchmē : þ̅ yere of Cryst .xxxii. He had many battellis agayns the Rodayns and Gallys. In his tyme Jhesu Cryst sufferyd passyon, and was cru-sefyed.

¶ **Clodomer**, sō of Marcomer, was next kīg of Frēchmē. In his time ther aperid .iii. sōis ī þ̅ firmamēt, which a lityll and lytill ioynynd all ī to one. Aft̅r þ̅ ther was gret derth ī all Europa, and gret deth of mē and bestis. This Clodomar passid þ̅ reuers of Rine and Meuze and had gret war agaīs þ̅ Gallis, with victory to his honor.

¶ **Athenor**, son of Clodomer, was next kīg of Frēchmē : þ̅ yer of Crist .lxii. He made a bryge ^t w^t bottis ouer þ̅ ryuer of Meuze, to haue passyd ī to Gallia ; but whē his peple wer ēteryd therō, þ̅ brygg brake, and mych of his peple wer droūnyd ; wherfor þ̅ Gallys cā vppō Athenor, and thē þ̅ wer past ouer ; and Athenor, vppō his horse, lept ī to the ryuer, to haue swō ouer, and to haue sauȳd hym self, and there was drownȳd.

¶ **Ratherus**, sō to Athenor, was next kīg of Frēchmē : þ̅ yere of Cryst .lxviii. He was a noble man, and hardy. He defēd his lād frō þ̅ Gallis, and made pease with Gerdayns and Saxons, and is beryed at Ratherdame.

¶ **Richemer**, sō of Ratherus, was next kīg of Frēchmē : þ̅ yere of Crist .lxxxix. He aydyd Wīdekīt, kīg of Saxōs, agaīs þ̅ Gotis, and slew of thē .xx.M. and made his yōger sō, callid Sōno, duke and prīce of a gret nūber of peple, which dyd īhabyt þ̅ lād now callid

Germania. This Sōno had a sō, callyd Clodomer, which byldyd ŷ towne of Frankford; therefore that coūtre was called a whyle Fraunce, and after ŷ Marcomere, by the duke called Marcomere, whiche had a sone called Brandon, whiche bylded ŷ towne of Brandenburgh; wherof the markes Brandonburgh, one of ŷ elizours of ŷ emperour, at this day bereth his name.

¶ **Odemer**, sone of Rychemere, was, after his fader, kyuge of ŷ Frensshmen. He kepte peas bothe with ŷ Romainys and Galles. He augmented gretely ŷ sacrefyse to the goddes, and specyally he caused to honoure ŷ god Mars, for by hym the people trusted for vycory.

¶ **Mercomer**, sonn to Odemer, was, after his fader, kīg of Frenchmen: the yere of Cryst .C.xxvii. He maryed Athyld, doughter to Maurus, kyng of Greate Bryttayne, and had .vii. sonnis, ŷ is to sey, Clodomer, Mercomer, that byldyd the cite of Mercoburg, Clogion, Francus, Meredak, Nichanor, and Odemar. Duryng this Mercomers tyme, the Frenchmen had no warris, therfore they īcresid in grete ryches. He reynyd .xxi. yere.

¶ **Clodomer**, son of Mercomer, was kīg after his fader. In his tyme the Galles prepared to make warre vpon him; but by his wisdom he pacefied it, ŷ they did no hurt. He reynid .xvii. yere.

¶ **Farabert**, sone of Clodomer, was, after his fader, kyng of Frenshemen: the yere of Cryst .Clxv. He confirmed the old alyans made by Francus with the Germainys, Saxons, Teutonikkes, and Cimbris, in the displesure of ŷ Romeyns; therfore the Romeyns entred in to Germeyn with a grete power, and ther was grete batell by twen them and the Frenchemē, and muche people sleyn; and after that Farabert dyed, after that he had reyned .xx. yere.

¶ **Sūno**, sone to Ferabert, was, after his fader, kyng of Frenche-

men. He was a hardy prynce, and had many battelles agaynst the Romeyns and Galles. He, with ŷ Germeynes and Saxōs, ēterid ī to Galia, and distroyed a great part of ŷ cūtre, and retorned hom a gayn. He reyned .xxvi. yere.

¶ **Chelderik**, sonn of Sūno, was made king of Frenchmen: the yere of Cryst .CC.xiii. He was both hardy and wyse, and incresyd his dominion; and as fast as he vsid his people to be callid Frenchmen, the Romyans and Galloys callid them euer Germayns, hauing the name of Frenchmen in disdayn; but yet they cōtenuid theyr name, with grete payn, as Hanibaldus wrytith.

¶ **Bartherus**, son of Chelderyk, was, after his fader, kyng of Frenchmen: the yere of Criste .CC.lij. In his tyme, Ancharius, son of Bartherus, and Luter, sone of kyng Morbodus, in Saxone, with the Frenchemen, Saxōs, and Germeyns, went ouer the ryuers of Ryne and Meuze, in to Galle, dystroyng the coūtre, and so forth, ouer the reuer of Seyne, in to Gall Celtyk, and from thens in to Spayen, wher they besegid the towne of Tereskone, and toke it and dystroyed it.

¶ **Clodyon**, sonn of Bartherus, was, after his fader, kyng of Frēchmen: the yere of Cryst .CC.lxxi. The .iii. yere of his reyne, the Romyans, remembryng the hurte done them in the cuntrey of Gallia, by the Frenchmen, cam in to Almayn with a gret host, wher ther was a great batell, and .xv.M. Almayns slayn; and the .ix. yere after, Clodiō ēteryd in to Gallia with a great host, and cōqueryd a great part of that cuntrey.

¶ **Walter**, son of Clodyon, was, after his fader, kyng of Frēchmen: the yere of Cryst .CC.xCviij. In his tyme was great persecucyon of crysten men, by Dioclisyan and Maxymian. He had but lytyll warr in hys tyme, but dyed after he had reynyd .viii. yere.

¶ **Dagobert**, sonne of Walter, was, after hys father, kyng of French-

mē: the yere of Cryste .CCC.vi. He was a good man, and just; he was in all cawsis so indyfferent, that it cowde neuer be prouyd that euer he did wrōge to any man, or sufferid any to be done to his knolege. He had .iii. sonnis, Clogion, Clodemer, and Genebault.

¶ **Clogio**, eldist sō of Dagobert, was next kīg of Frēchmē. He reyned but .ii. yere, and laft .ii. yong sonnis, which succedid not hym, be cause of theyre yong age.

¶ **Clodomer**, the second son of Dagobart, and brother to Clogion, was next kyng of Frenchmen. He made pese betwen the Sānis and the Thuringiens, and becawse he fauorid the Thuryngiens, they gaue hym a cōtrei lieng betwen them and the Sānis, which contrey Clodomer gaue to Genebault, his yonger brother, which with gret people did inhabit it, and callid it Fraūce Oryētall, where now the cytce of Wyrzburg is set.

¶ **Dagobert**, son of Genebault, was, after his fader, duke of Fraunce Oriētall. He, with a gret host, passid the Ryne, and tooke the cyte of Treues, in Gallia. After hym, one Clodion was duke of Fraunce Orientall.

¶ **Rychemer**, son of Clodomer, was, after his fader, kynge of Frenchmen. He, with the help of Genebault, wan many battells agayne the Romainys and Gallis; but, at the last, he was slayne by the Romainys.

¶ **Theodomer**, sone of Rychemer, was, after his fader, kynge of Frenchmen. He hade many bateylls in Gallia, agayne the Romainys, but, at the last, he was takyn and hedyd.

¶ **Clogion**, son of Theodomer, was, after his father, kyng of Frenchmen: the yere of Cryst .CCC.lx. This Clogion, to reuenge the deth of his fader, with a grete host passed in to Gallia, and toke

the cite of Cambrey, and slew all the Romaines therin. He conquered Gallia, vnto the flood of Seyne.

¶ **Marcomer**, son of Clogion, was, after his fader, kyng of Frenchmen. He had many grete bateylls agayn the Romaines and Gallis; but at the last he was sleyn in Germanyn, in an army agayns Valentinian; thē the Frenchmen were with out kyng .xv. yere, durīg which tyme .ii. dukis, one aft̄ another, dyd gouern ŷ people, ŷ is to sey, furst Dagobert, broder to Mercomer, .v. yere; and after, Genebault, sō of the seid Dagobert, whych rulyd as duke .xi. yere.

¶ **Mercomer**, son of Clodion, was duke of Fraunce Orientall; ŷ is to sey, of Francony, whyle that Dagobert rulyd the realme of Frenchmē. In his tyme, Frenchmē, with the cōduit of certeyn dukis, wēt in to Germanyn ouer the flood of Ryne, and toke the cite of Treues; wher of Lucius was gouernoure vnder the Romaines; and after they cam from thens to the ryuer of Seyne, and, for they saw it a goodly cuntrey, they chase it for theyr habytacion.

¶ **Pharamound**, sonne to Mercomer, that was duke of Fraūce Oryentall, was made furst kyng of Fraunce Oryentall; and after, by a comune assent, was made kyng of all Fraunce, and the fyrst that enhabyted Gallia: the yere of Cryst .CCCC.xx. He gaue his broder Marcomer the dukedome of Fraūce Oryentall, where nowe the cyte of Frankforde is set. He ordeyned the lawe salique.

¶ **Clodion**, sone of Pharamonde, was the .ii. kynge of Fraunce: the yere of Cryst .CCCC.xxx. He made warre vpon a certayne people called Turynges, and thē subdued. He adioyned to ŷ royalme of Fraūce all the countre from the ryuer of Seyne to the ryuer of Leyre, of whiche countres the Romaines had neuer after domynyon.

¶ **Merouee**, sone of Clodiō, was the thirde kyng of Fraūce. In his time, one Attilia, king of Huns, now callyd Hōgry, callynge hyni

selfe y skorge of God, cam into Galia with .CC.M. mē, and there dystroyd many grete townys, and besegid the cite of Orleans; and from thēs cam to Chāpayn, wher that one Aecius, leuetenaūt to the ēperour Theodose, Merouee, king of Fraunce, Theodoryk, kīg of Gotis, and other, gaderyd to geder, and gaue hī batell; where on both partes were slain .C.lxxx.M. mē; where Gūderis, kīg or duke of Borgoyne, and Theodorike, kīg of Gotis, were slayne, and gret nomber of Attilia his people slayne and minished; wherfore Attilia returnid agayne to Hungery.

¶ **Chelderyk**, son of Merouee, was next kyng of Fraūce, after his fader: the yere of Cryst .iiii.C.lx. He was so cruell, y hys people cōspyryd agayns hym, for fere whereof he fled to Thuryng; wherfore they dyd chose one Gelyon, lieutenent to the emperour, to be theyr kyng; whych Gelyon was more cruell; wherfore they put out Gelyō, and toke Chelderyk agayn as kyng, which after subdued to his obey-saūce all the contrey, from Thoronaunce to the flood of Leyre, and after dyed.

¶ **Clouys**, sonne of Chelderyk, was, after hys father, kyng of Fraunce: the yere of Cryst .iiii.C.lxxxiiii. He was cruell at the furst agaynst Crystēdome, for he pyllyd the churchys, and thē brent. After he maryed Croytyll, dougter and heyre to Chelperyk, kyng of Borgoyne. This Croytell exortyd her husband to be crystenyd, but he euer refusyd; tyll at the last, at a battell that he had agaynst the Allmayns, he made promyse to Cryst, that if he wan the victory he wold be crystenyd, and so he had ther the victory, and then, accordyng to hys promyse, he reyseyuyd baptysme of Seynt Reny, archbyshop of Reynys, and there ānoyntyd hym as a sacryd kynge. Hyt is seyde that .iiii. flowre delyse in a feld of asure was sent to kyng Clouys, from heuyn, for his armys, and also a stāderd of red sylk, whych they euer syth vse to bere in theyr batells, whych before bare in theyr armis .iiii. todys. And thys Clouys made war agaynst the

Gotys folowars of the sekt of the Aryens, and wan of them Gascoyn and Guyon.

¶ **Cheldebert**, y eldest sō of Clouis, was next kīg. He beldyd y church of Seynt Germanyn, besyde Parys.

¶ **Cloyter**, sone of Clouis, was next kyng of all Fraunce: the yere of Cryst .v.C.lix. He was an euyll man. He slew his .ii. newewis, and maryed theyre mother. He slew y lorde Dyuetot, in Normandy; therfore the pope Agapyt made hym to make fre the contrey, so that the lorde therof was namyd kyng, and is to thys day. He reynynd .v. yere.

¶ **Aribert**, son of Clotyer, was next kyng. He was a commen aduouterer, and dyed after he had reynynd .ix. yere.

¶ **Chelperyk**, son of Cloyter, was next kyng of Fraunce: the yere of Cryst .v.C.lxxiii. He slew his wyfe in the nyght, and maryed one Andouere, whome after he forsoke, and toke to wyfe on Fredegund, an evyll and a cruell woman.

¶ **Cloyter**, son of Chelperyk, was next kyng of Fraūce: the yere of Cryst .v.C.lxxx.vii. whē he was but .iiii. monethys old, in y kepyng of hys moder, whych made great warr agaynst Theobert and Thyery, sonnys to Chyldebert, kyng of Metis and Burgoyne; and when he was of age he was kyng of all Fraūce.

¶ **Dagobert**, sō of the secōd Cloyter, was next kīg of Frāce: y yere of Crist .vi.C.xxxi. He foūd y church of Seīt Denis .ii. leges frō Pares. He gauē to Heybert, hys broder, the cōtrei of Tholoze, and to Sygebert, his secōd sō, y contrey of Austrey. He relessid to y Saxons the tribute of .v. C. oxon, whyche they payd yerely to the kyngys of Fraunce. He warryd agaynst the Gascoyns, and made the Brittons in Lyttell Britteyne to hym tributaries.

¶ **Clouis**, sō of Dagobert, was next kyng of Fraūce: the yere of Cryst .vi.C.xlv. In his tyme was grete darth in Fraūce, and therfore he vncoueryd the church of Seynt Denys, which was coueryd with syluer, and gaue it to pore people.

¶ **Cloyter**, sō of Clouis, was next kīg of Frāce: ŷ yere of Cryst .vi.C.lxii. He ordeynyd mayrs of ŷ palys; and after that the kyngis of Fraūce left all bysynes of the comyn wele and study therof, and gaff them self to slewth, gloteny, and other pleasurs, and dyd no good, but ons in the yere shewd them selff to theyre people, with pryde and pompe.

¶ **Theodor**, son of Clouis, was next kyng of Frauce: the yere of Cryst .vi.C.lxvi.; and, after ŷ he had bene a whyle kyng, for his wantones and lyghtenes he was expulsyd, and Chelderyk, hys brother, put in his stede; and after, Chelderek, for his cruelte, was slayn, and than Theoder made kyng agayn.

¶ **Clouis**, son of Theodor, next kīg of Frāce: ŷ yere of Crist .vi.C.xciii.

¶ **Cheldebert** .ii. sō of Theodor, was next kīg of Fraūce: ŷ yere of Crist .vi.C.xcvii.

¶ **Dagobert**, son to Cheldebert, was next kyng of Fraunce: the yere of Cryst .vii.C.xv.

¶ **Cloyter**, the second son of Cheldebert, was next kyng of Fraunce: the yere of Cryst .vii.C.xix.

¶ **Theodor**, son of Dagobert, was next kyng of Fraunce: the yere of Cryst .vii.C.xxvi.

¶ **Chelderyk**, sonn of Theodor, was next king of Fraūce: the yere of Crist .vii.C.xli. but; because he gaue him self all to lechery and plesure, and was vnprofitable to the realm, he therfore was deposid by pope Zachary, after ŷ he had reinid .ix. yeris, and Pepin, son to Charlis Martell, make king.

¶ **Pepin**, son of Charles Martell, was, by ŷ auctorite of the pope Zachary, declarid kinge of Fraūce: the yere of Crist .vii.C.l. He passid the moūteyns twise, and cam in to Italy to socour the pope Steuin, agaynst Astulph, king of Lumberdy, which kept the landis of the church from the pope, and restorid the pope agayn to his landis and to his sec.



¶ **Charlis ŷ Graūt**, or Charlmayne, was next king of Fraūce: ŷ yere of Crist .vii.C.lxxiii. This Charlmayn ordeynyd the .xii. perys of Fraunce to be at the crownyng and noyntyng of the kyng. He subduyd Dydyer, kyng of Lumberdy, which had, by force, takyn dyuers lādys frō the pope Adryā, and restoryd the pope to the possesyon of them; and therfore the pope grauntyd hym many gret priuilegys, conteynyng in the Canon Adrian.

¶ After that, this Charlys subdewyd ŷ Saxōs, and wēt in to Spayne with a grete host agayns ŷ infidellis, and there conqueryd a grete contre; but as he cam home, by the moūteyns of Phyrhenes and Roūce-ualz, the Gascons gafe hym a grete battell, where Rouland and Olyuer wēre slayn, and other of the noblest of his army. He ordeynyd the vnyuersite of Pares. He byldyd .vii. churches in ŷ honor of Seynt Jamys. Also he was emperour, made by pope Leo, and laft the gouernaūce of Fraūce to his eldyst sōn Charles, but he dyed before his father.

¶ **Lews ŷ Myld**, was next kyng of Fraūce, and also emperour, as

apperyth a boue, among the emperours. In his tyme, a grete cōpany of the Danis and Normanys inuaydyd the land of Fraūce, and dyd grete hurt; but this Lews shorly after vanquesshyd thē, and drofe them owt of his lādis. Also this tyme, in a grete tempest of hayle in Fraūce, ther fell down, owt of the heyre, a pese of yse, whych was .xv. fote in lenght, .vi. fote in brede, and .ii. fote of thyknes.

¶ **Charlys the Bald**, sonne to Lewys the Mylde, was next kynge of Fraunce: the yere of Cryst .viii.C.xl.; and, after the deth of Lewys, sonne of Lothayre, he was made emperoure; and, after that he was in Fraūce poysonyd. In his tyme, the Danys, beyng panymis of beleue, enterid first the cuntrey of Fraunce, spoylyng the cuntrey, and sleying the people, and so contynuyd long tyme after.

¶ **Lews ŷ Stutter**, sō to Charles ŷ Bald, was next kyng of Frāce, and also ēperour: ŷ yere of Cryst .viii.C.lxxviii.

¶ **Lewys and Charlon**, sonis to Lewis the Stutter, were next kīgis of Fraunce: ŷ yere of Cryst .viii.C.lxxx.; and they reynid .v. yere, ŷ is to sey, Lews .iiii. yere, and Charlō one yere.

¶ **Eudo**, sō of Robert, yerle of Āgeow, was next kīg.

¶ **Charlys the Synple**, sonne of Lewes the Stutter, was next kynge of Fraunce: the yere of Cyste .ix.C.iiii. In his tyme, ŷ Saresēs ētered ŷ lād of Burgoyne; but the kyng fought with thē, and had ŷ victory, but not without losse of men.

¶ **Lewes**, sō to Charlis the Simple, was nexte kynge of Fraūce: the yere of Cryste .ix.C.xxxiiii.

¶ **Loyter**, the eldyst sō of Lews, was next kīg of Fraūce. He made gret warr vppon Rychard, duke of Normandy, and wan the cyte of Bayon.

¶ **Lewys**, son of Loyter, was next kyng of Fraunce: the yere of Cryste .ix.C.lxxxvi.

¶ This Lewis was the last kīg of the blood of Pyppin. He died without issue, and ordenid Hugh Capet, his famylyer, to be his heyr.

¶ **Hue Capet**, sō of Hugh ſ Graūt, yerle of Paris, was next kyng of Fraūce: ſ yeer of Criste .ix.C.lxxxvii.

¶ **Robert**, son of Hugh Capet, was next kyng of Fraunce: the yere of Cryste .ix.C.xCvi.

¶ **Henry**, son of Robert, was next kyng of Fraūce: the yere of Cryst .M.xxx.

In the tyme of this Henry, part of the Borgonyons, that had be long vnder the obedyence of Fraūce, refusyd the French kyng, and tornyd to Conrard, ēperour. ¶ This Henry had .iii. sonnys, one callyd Phyllyp, which was kyng of Fraunce, his fader lyuyng; a nother callyd Robert, that was duke of Burgoyn; and an other callyd Hugh the Graūt, ſ was yerle of Vermēdose.

¶ **Philyppe**, the fyrst of that name, was nexte kyng of Fraunce: the yere of Chryst .M.lx.; and whan he had reygned .xlix. yere, he resygnd his crowne to Lewes, his sonne.

¶ **Lewys the Great** was nexte kynge of Fraunce: the yere of Chryst .M.C.ix. In his tyme, Philyppe, his eldyst son, rydyng in Parys, kylde a chylde in the strete, with his horse; wherfore the kynge bēyng sore displeased, caused his yonger son Lewys to be crownde kyng in his lyfe.

¶ **Lewys**, son to Lewys the Great, was nexte kyng of Fraunce: the yere of Chryst .M.C.xxxvii. This Lewys beyng longe from the

companye of his wyfe, on a tyme fell sycke, and his phesicyons counsellled hym to take a wenche, but he wolde nat, and sayd it was better for hym to dye vpon Goddes hande than to lyue in spousebreche, and sone after that he receyued helthe.

¶ **Philyppe**, called Philyppe Auguste, was nexte kynge of Fraūce: the yere of Chryst .M.C.lxxx. He wanne a great battell agaynst Otton the emperour, Ferrande, erle of Flaūders, and Raynolde, erle of Bulleyne, and toke bothe those erles prisoners.

¶ **Lewys** the .viii. son to the seconde Philyppe, was nexte kynge of Fraunce: the yere of Chryst .M.CC.xxii. He beseged the towne of Aunnion, and wanne it.

¶ **Lewys** the .ix. called Saint Lewys, was next kyng of Fraūce: the yere of Chryst .M.CC.xxvii. He made two voyages into y holy lande; and in the fyrst, he was takyn prisoner, and in the .ii. he dyed.

¶ **Philyppe** the Thyrd, sonne to Saynt Lewys, was nexte kynge of Fraunce: the yere of Chryst .M.CC.lxx. He had great warre agaynst the kynge of Castell. He conquered Arogon.

¶ **Philyppe le Belle**, sonne to Philyppe the Thyrd, was nexte kynge of Fraunce. He had great warre with the Flemynges, and great battels betwene them. He had a doughter called Isabell, whiche was maryed to Edwarde the Seconde, kynge of Englande, by whome he had issue Edwarde the Thyrd, whiche, because all the sonnes of this Philyppe dyed without issue, this Edwarde the Thyrd claymed to be kynge of Fraunce.

¶ **Lewys Outen**, son of Philyppe le Belle, was nexte kynge of Fraunce: the yere of Chryst .M.CCC.xiii. He made the court of parlyament of Fraunce to be holden contynually in Parys. He reyned .ii. yere, and lasse his wyfe, the quene, with chylde.

¶ **John**, son to Lewys, was borne after his fathers dethe, and reyned but .viii. dayes.

¶ **Philyppe le Longe**, seconde son of Philyppe le Bell, was nexte kyng of Fraunce. He ordayned but one weyght and mesure to be thorowe all Fraunce.

¶ **Charles**, the thyrde sonne of Philyppe le Belle, was nexte kyng of Fraunce.

¶ **Philyppe de Valoys**, son of Charles, was next kyng of Fraunce: the yere of Chryst .M.CCC.xxvii. He eyded Lewys, the erle of Flaunders, agaynst the Flemynges, that wolde nat obey hym, and slewe .vi.M. of them at Casell, and restored y^e erle agayne to his cōtrei, from whens he was dryuen.

¶ **John**, son of Philyppe de Valoys, was nexte kyng of Fraunce: the yere of Chryst .M.CCC.l. He gathered a disme of his clargye and of his temperalte, to pay his raunsome to kyng Edward of Englande, to whome he was prisoner.

¶ **Charles**, called the sage, son of Charles, was nexte kyng of Fraunce: the yere of Chryst .M.CCC.lxiii. He recouered the contrei of Poetowe and Rochell, and many holdes agaynst the Englysshe-men, whiche they before had wonne.

¶ **Charles** the .vi. was nexte Frenche kyng: the yere of Chryst .M.CCC.lxxx. He made great warre agaynst them of Gaunt, and other of the Flemynges, that wolde nat obey theyr duke, and slewe of them .xl.M.

¶ **Philyppe**, duke of Burgoyne, son to John, kyng of Fraunce, maryed Margaryt, doughter to Lewys, erle of Flaunders, and by her was erle of Flaunders.

¶ **Charles** the .vii. was nexte Frenche kynge : ſ yere of Chryst .M.iiii.C.xxii. He had great warre with the Englysshemen, to whose helpe there cam a mayde of Fraunce, whome the Frenchemen called La Pusell de dieu ; but she was take and brent by the Englysshemen. But, in the ende, this Charles wanne all that agayne, whiche the Englysshemen had gotte before, that is to say, Parys, ſ contreys of hye Champayne, Normandye, and Guyan, and dyuers other.

¶ **Lewys**, son of Charles, was nexte Frenche kynge : the yere of Chryste .M.CCCC.lxi. He had great warre with Charles, the duke of Burgon.

¶ **Charles** the .viii. was nexte Frenche kynge : the yere of Chryst .M.CCCC.lxxxiii. He passed the mountaynes, and wanne the realme of Naples ; but, in his returne, he was incountered by the Mylleners and the Venicyans, and fled with great daunger.

Norman History.

¶ **Rollo**, born ī Norway, with a grete cōpany of Norweys, Danis, Panēmys, and infydels, came ī to ŷ cōtreȳ of Neuster, and there toke ŷ cyte of Roan, and dyd in that contrey, and other landis of Fraunce, grete cruelte, distroyng the peple and churchis of Cristis feyth; wherfore Charlis the Siple, king of Fraunce, to make pease, gaff hym the seyȳd contrey, and his doughter Gilda to wif; and so be agrement Rollo was baptysyd, and callyd Robert, and after ŷ chāchyd ŷ name of ŷ lād, and callyd hit Normādy; and so was furst duke of Normādy.

¶ **Wilm**, sō to Rollo, callyd Lōga Spata, was next duke of Normandy. He gouernyd that land with good justyce, and after was slayn by the treson of Arnold, yerle of Flaunders.

¶ **Rychard**, callyd the Hardy, sonne to Wyllyam, was nexte duke of Normandy; and, because kyng Loyter had wonne from hym the cyte of Bayon, he, by the help of Erard, kyng of Denmarke, enteryd in to Fraunce, spoylyng the countrey and sleying the peple with out pyte; wherfore Loyter, kyng of Frāce, was compellyd to take pease, and to redelyuer to hym the cyte of Bayon.

¶ **Rychard**, callyd the Good, son to Rychard the Hardy, was next duke of Normandy. He was louynge to Robert, kynge of Fraunce, and eydyd hym in his warrys; wherby the seyde kyng subdued the contrey of Borgoyne to his obedyens.

¶ **Rychard**, son to Rychard the Good, was next duke of Normandy: but with in .ii. yeris he was slayn, by treason of his broder Robert.

¶ **Robert**, broder to Rychard, was next duke of Normandy. He toke repentāce for the deth of this broder Rychard, and went to Jerusalem, and dyed as he retornyd homeward; but at his departyng thydre, he wyllyd that his lordis shuld take his sone, Wyllm̄ the basterd, to theyr lord, and so they dyd, and put out the yōg chyld ŷ was sō to Robert and mulyery gottē: but therfore fell grete debate; and Hēry, kyng of Fraūce, toke parte a gayns Willm, but euermore Wyllm̄ had the victory.

¶ **Willm̄**, bast sonne to Robert, was next duke of Normandy, which had gret war with Henry, kyng of Fraūce, as is aboue shewd.

This Wil̄m, duke of Normandy, cam in to Englonde, to kyng Edward, and of hym had grete chere. He was cosyn to kyng Edward by his fader seyde, that is to sey, son to Robert, sō to Rychard the Good, sō to Rychard the Hardy; which Rychard the Hardy was both fader to Rychard the Good and to Ēma, moder to ŷ seyde kyng Edward; and therfore, as some afferme, kyng Edward graūtyd to hym the kyngdome of Englonde, after his deth.

¶ **Robert**, after the dethe of his father Wylliam, Conquerour of Englande, was nexte duke of Normandy, whiche dyed in the prison of his brother Wylliam Rufus, kynge of Englande. And than the duchye of Normandy was vnder the dominyon of the kynges of Englande many yeres afterwarde.

British History.



Brutus was son to Siluius son to Ascanius son to Eneas, that cā from Troye, after the affyrmance of Galfridus Monumetensis, which wrytyth, that thys Siluius begat vppon a damsell, a chylde callyd Brute, in whose byrth the moder dyed, and after that, thys Brutus slew his fader with an arrow as he wold haue shot at a wyld beste, wherfore he was banyshyd and fled in to Greece, where he delyueryd owt of bondage mych people of the Troians, whych rose wyth hym agayns the kyng Pandrasus which had them in subieciyon; and after that, he maryed the doughter of the seyd Pandrasus callyd Innogen, and thā with his peple he sayld in to an yland in Affrica, where he made sacryfyse and prayer to the goddes Diana, which gaue hym answer, that he shuld go in to ā ylād ī ŷ west part, mete for his peple to dwell in, where he shuld be kyng and his chylderne after hym, and there he shuld byld a new Troy; vppō which āswere he took his vyage thyderward and met a cosyn of his callyd Coryn, which both togeder furst aryuyd in a place of Gallia now callyd Guian, where he had a gret battyell, and though they had the victory and slew the prynce there, callyd Copharius, yet Tornus, cosyn to Brute, was there slayn and many of the Toyās; where Tornus was buried, of whom the cyte ther bildyd was callyd Turon,

and so is callyd vnto this day : and then Brute took shyping agayn, and so saylyng, at the last arriuid in the yle callyd Albion, ihabytyd only with brute bestis and gyaūtys, where he took possessiō and callyd it after his own name Brytteyn. But Coryn, cosyn of Brute, wrastelyd with one of the gyaūts callid Gogmagog, and cast hī down a rok, wher he dyed ; wherfore Brute gaue Coryn all ŷ cōtrei which was callyd Cornwall after his name, and after ŷ, Brute wēt forth and foūd a feyre ryuer and a place cōueniēt, where he byldyd a cyte, and callyd it Tronouaūt, that is to sey, new Troy, whych is now callyd Lōdō. This Brute had by his seyde wife Innogen .iii. sonnys Locrinus, Albanactus, and Camber, and died after that he had reynyde .xxiiii. yere, and was buryed at new Troye.

¶ **Locrinus**, the furst son of Brute, was kyng of Brytteyn after his fader ; howbeit he gaue to Cāber a part thereof, which was ā owt quarter, and now is callyd Walys, and gaue to Albanactus ā other owt quarter, now callyd Skotland. This Locryne weddyd Gwintolina, doughter to Coryn, and after put her away, for the loue of a fayre woman callyd Estrilda, and beegat vppon her a doughter callyd Abran ; wherfore Gwintolina went in to Cornewall, and reysyd people, and gaue batteyll to her lord Locryn, wher he was slayn ; and then Gwintolina tooke Estrilde and Abran, and boūd them hād and foot, and cast them in to a water, which therfore was callyd Abrahā, and so is callyd of the Welchmē at this day ; but, in ēglissh, the water is callyd Seuerne. And then Gwintolina rulyd the lād, tyll that Madan, her sonn, gotten of Locryne, was .xx. yere old ; and then she went in to Cornewall.

¶ **Madan**, son to Locryne, was then kyng of Brytteyn. He had .ii. sonnys, Mēprisius and Mallius, and reynyde .xxx. yere.

¶ **Mēprisius** and his broder **Mallius** stroue for the kyngdome ; but, at a day of truse, Memprisius slew his broder by treasō, and after was crownyd kyng, which after waxyd both cruell and lecherouse,

and forsook his wyfe, and vsyd the synne of Sodomye ; wherfore God tooke vengeaunce on hym ; for as he went on huntynge in a wood, he lost hys company, and wanderyd all alone ; and then cam wolffys and all to rent hym in pesys ; wherof hys people were glad.

¶ **Ebrank**, sō to Menpresyus, reynynd next. He cōqueryd Fraūce, and wan there grete tresure, and cam agayn, and byldyd a cyte callyd Eborak, after hys name, which now is calleyd York ; and byldyd Edinborow castell.

¶ **Brute Brenghelde**, callyd Viride Stutun, reynynd after his fader Ebrank, .xxx. yere.

¶ **Leyle**, son to Brute, reynynd next, after he made the town of Karlell. In his tyme Salamon made ŷ temple of Jerusalem. This Leyle reynynd .xxii. yere.

¶ **Ludibras**, son to Leyle, reynynd after hym. He made the ceties of Canterbury and Wynchester, and Shaftisbury. He reynynd .xxx. yere.

¶ **Bladud**, son to Ludibras, reynynd next. He made the cyte of Bath ; and, as the story seyth, he was a grete nigromancyer ; and by ŷ craft made there ŷ hote bathys ; but other clerkis hold opynyon that they come naturally of ŷ grounde, be cause ther be manny sych in other placis, as in Darbyshyer at Boxtone, and many other in Italye and dyuers other landis. Some phylozophers holde that ŷ cause therof is thus ; that whā there is a hote fume, which perpetuall comyth and fumyth out of the yerth, wherof ye may se manny of them, by experyence, in Italy, which be euer perpetually hote, and fumyng, and smokyng out of the yerth, lyke wyse as wel spryngis come out of the yerth perpetually ; and when anny welspryng brekyth out at any place of the yerth where sych a hote fume is nygh joynīg, thā if ŷ hote fume be bygger of power, thē it will naturally make the

water hote; and because ŷ hote fume and welsprýng be bōth of theyr naturis perpetuall, that hote bath of water must be perpetually hote; but whether men will beleue the history, or the phylozophers, euery man is at his lyberte. This Bladud reynynd .xxi. yere.

¶ **Leyre**, sō to Bladud, reynynd next. He made ŷ town of Leycēt, after his name. He had .iii. doughters; and because the eldest doughter, Genoril, seyde she louyd hym better than her lyfe, and the .ii. callyd Rogane, seyde she loued hym passyng all creaturs, and the .iii. doughters, called Cordell, seyde that she louyd hym as she ought to loue her father, he therfore maryed his eldest doughter to the kyng of Skotland, and the .ii. to the yerle of Cornwall, nothyng regardyng his yongist doughter; and gafe his hole realme and land in his lyfe to his two eldest doughters; but ŷ kyng of Fraūce, callyd Agamp, herd speke of the bewty and goodnes of Cordell, and toke her to wyfē, though ŷ father had nothyng to gyfe her. After this, Leyr soiornyd with his eldest doughter a whyle, with .xl. knyghtis and squyeris, waytyng on hym so long tyll ŷ she was wery of hym; wherefore he departyd thēs, and went to his other doughter, in to Cornewall, and there soiornyd so long tell ŷ she was also wery of hym; wherefore he departyd preuely in to Fraūce, to his yongyst doughter, whiche there reseuyd hym louyngly; and when kyng Agampe knewe how vnkyndely his .ii. doughters scruyd hym, he sent hym ouer agayn, with his doughter and a grete people with hym, whych, ī strōg bateyl, had ŷ victory, and so Leyr had his lād again, and lyffyd after ŷ .iii. yere, and ī all reynynd .xl. yere.

¶ **Cordell**, the yōgist doughter of Leyre, hyld the land next after her father, .v. yeres; and the meane whyle Agamp, kyng of Fraūce, dyed. Howbeit the cronycles of Fraūce disagreith herin with Galfridus, for they wryte of non callyd Agamp that shuld be kyng of Fraunce.

¶ **Morgā** and **Concedak**, ŷ were sōns to ŷ other .ii. sisters, warryd

vppō Cordell, and at ŷ last took her and put her in prison, and partid ŷ. lād betwen them; and after, Conedak slew Morgan at a place in Walis, now callyd Glomorgan, and reynid .xxxix. yere.

¶ **Riuallus**, sō to Conedak, reynid next, and gouernid well the lād. In his time it reynid blood .iii. days, and after ŷ folowid gret deth of pepull and bestes. Whē he had reynid .xxii. yere he died, and is buried at York.

¶ **Gurgūcius**, sō to Riuallus, was a meeke man, and curteyse; and reynyd .vii. yere, and lyeth at Yorke.

¶ **Sisillius** reynyd next after; as sone as he had take the crown he dyed.

¶ **Pago**, neuew to Gurgūcius, reynyd nexte after, but a short tyme.

¶ **Kimarcus**, sō to Sisilius, reynid next.

¶ **Gorboniā** reynyd next after. He had .ii. sonnys, one callyd Porrex and the other Ferrex.

¶ **Porrex** and **Ferrex** strofe for the lād, but Porrex slew his broder; and therfore his moder, callid Idon, with her maydyns, whē he was a slepe, cut him all to pecis, and after ŷ, ŷ lād was deuidid in to .iiii. kīgdomis; one was callyd Stater, kyng of Skotland, an other Dawaller, kyng of Loigers, an other Rudak, kīg of Walis, an other Cloten, king of Cornwall.

¶ **Dūwallō**, sō to Clotē, after ŷ deth of his fader, was ā hardy mā, and a fayr, passing all other of the Bryttōs. His fader Clotē was next heyr to ŷ hole lād; therfor Dūwall slew Stater and Rudak in playn batell, and so cōqueryd all the hole lād, and was ŷ fūrst that euer ware crown of gold ī Briteyn, and ordenyd diuers lawis, wherof one

was, *ȝ* he *ȝ* had *dō* neuer so gret offēce; and *cā* to *ȝ* tēple for sauegard, *ȝ* no *mā* shuld hurt *hī*, but *thē* he might, after *ȝ*, go to what cōtreȝ hym lyst. He reynyd .xl. yeer, and lyeth at New Troye.

¶ *Belinus* and *Brenius*, sonnys to *Dunwallo*, reynyd next joyntely. They went to *Germanyn*, *Lombardy*, and *Rome*, and had victory, and tooke hostages, and made the *Romayns* trybutaryes, as *Galfrydus* wrytyth, and after cam agayn in to *Brytteyn*. Also when *Brenne* was out of the lande, one *Guthlach*, kyng of *Denmarke*, beyng vppon *ȝ* see, by tempest was dryuē to land in *Northumberland*; which *Guthlach* then becam *Belinis* man, and dyd hym homage by othe and wrytyng, and grauntid to hold his land of hym, yeldyng a certeyn trybute by yere; which couenantis were holden and payd vnto one *Hanelache*, was kyng of *Denmarke*. This *Brenne* made the towne of *Brystowe*, and *Belyn* made *Bylyngis* gate, after his name; and when he had reynyd .xli. yere he dyed. His body was brent, and *ȝ* ashis put in a vessell of gold, and set in the top of the Towre which he had made at *Byllyngis* gate.

¶ *Gurguncius*, sō to *Belyn*, reynyd next after, a good man and a worthy. He went to *Denmarke*, and slew *Guthlach*, kyng, because he payd not his trybute, and so conqueryd the land agayn; and as he retornid agayn to ward *Brytteyn*, as *Galfrydus* wrytyth, he met .xxx. sheppis on the see, wyth men and women *ȝ* were banysshyd owt of *Spayn*, that sought some contrey to dwell in, and desyryd hym of socour; and *thē* *Gurguncius* sent his pepyll with them, and lad them in to *Yreland*, that was than all wast, and gaff *thē* that land, which toke it of his gyft, and becam his trybutaryes. He reynyd .xxv. yere.

¶ *Guitelinus*, sō to *Gurgūcius*, reynyd next. He wedyd a wyff callyd *Marcia*, which was verey wyse and cōnyng in all scyens. She made the *Brytteyn* lawys callyd the march laws. He reynyd .xxvi. yere.

¶ **Sisilius**, son to Guitelyne, reynyd next peasably .xv. yere.

¶ **Kymaurus**, son to Sisillius, reynyd next .xix. yere.

¶ **Daius**, brother to Kymor, reynyd next .x. yeer.

¶ **Morwidus**, son to Daius, reynyd next. He was a wykkyd man. In his tyme, one that was kyng of Moryan enteryd in to Northumberland, to haue conqueryd the contrey; but this Morwidus met with hym in playn batteyll, and had the victory, wher not one escapyd; for he cōmaūdyd euery one of his ēmys that were takyn to be browghte before hym, and slewe them wyth his owne handis; and when he was very therof, he commaūdyd them to be fleyd quyke, and to be brent. But God, for the pleasure he had therin, toke vengeaūce, on hym, for dyuers mōsters of the se cam from the Irysh se into the next part of Brytteyn, and there deuouryd much peple; wherfore the kyng cam thider, and coragiously shot at one of the monsters with a gret crosbow; but anon the monster ran vppon hym, and so slew and deuouryd hym.

¶ **Gorbonianus**, son to Morwyd, reynyd nexte. He mayntenyd poore laborers and husbandmen, and wold suffer no lord nor other to do them wrong. In his tyme the land waxid meruelouse ryche, both of gold, syluer, and other goodis. He byldyd Camebryge and Grauntam, and was welbelouyd of his people.

¶ **Arthegall**, broder to Gorbonian, reynyd next. He was a cruell man and couetouse, wherfore his people deposyd hym, and made his broder Elidurus, or Heleodorus, kyng; and he became so good and mercyfull, that he was callyd the Kyng of Pyte; for when he had reynyd .v. yerys he made his brother Arthegall kyng agayn, and so forsoke ſ crowne. And after ſ, Arthegall becam a good mā, and whē he had reynyd .vi. yeer, dyed.

¶ **Elidurus**, his brother, was than chosyn kyng agayn the second tyme, but his other .ii. brethern, Higanus and Paridurus, warryd vppon hym, and took hym and put hym in pryson, and departyd the land betwyxt them; but Higanus lyuyd but .vii. yere after, and dyed, and thē had Paridurus ſ̄ hole lād; but he thā waxyd so charytable that men seyde he passyd Elidurus in goodnes. He lyffyd after but .ii. yere; and after that, the Brytteyns dyd chose agayn Elidurus to be kyng the .iii. tyme, which lyuyd after ſ̄ .xiiii. yere.

¶ After the deth of Elidurus, ther reynyde in Brytteyn .xxxii. kyngys, ych after other, without war or any gret inquyetacōn of the people; that is to sey, Gorbodianus, Morganus, Eunianus, which vsyd so mych tyranny that the people deposyd hym, and made kyng his cosyn Idwallus; after hym reynyde Runo, Geroncius, Catullus, Coillus, Porrex, Cherinus, Sulgenius, Andragius, Urianus, Eliud, Eledancus, Cloterus, Gurguncius, Merianus, Bledudus, Cappus, Oenus, Sisillius, Bledgabredus. He excellid all other in cōnyng of musyk, and in pleyeng vppon all maner of instrumentys of musyk, that the peple callyd hym the god of melody; after hym reynyde Archyuall, Eldok, Rodianus, Rederclius, Samuelus, Pirrus, Caporus, Dignelius, and then Hely.

¶ **Hely**, that was son to Dignellius, reynyde next his fader, and had .iii. sonis, Lud, Cassibelane, and Neuius.

¶ **Lud**, son to Hely, reynyde next after. He gouernyd well the lād, and louyd more to dwell at Nēw Troye than at any other place of the land, wherfore the name of New Troye was lost, and callyd Luddestō, and now, by chaunge of spech and letters, it is callyd Lōdon. This kyng made to the cite a fayre gate, callyd Ludgate, after his name. He had .ii. sonnis, Androgenus, and the other Tenencius. He dyed, and is buryed at London.

¶ **Cassibelan**, brother to Lud, was so good a man, and so wel

belouyd, that he was chosyn kyng next, because Lud his sonnis were thā so yong that they coud nother go nor speke ; but ŷ kyng afterward made Androgen yerle of Lōdon, and Tenencius yerle of Cornwall. In his tyme, Julius Cesar, that after was emperour of Rome, cam in to Brytayn, with gret power of Romainys, but Cassibelan drof hym owt ; and after ŷ, debate fell betwen the kyng and Androgen ; and after that, Julius came agayne, as Galfridus writith, by the help of Androgen, and ouercam Cassibelā, and made hym gyffan yerely trybute to Rome of .iii.Ml. ; and anon after, Julius went to Rome, and Androgene with hym ; and after, in the cenate house, Julius, beīg emperour, was slayn of the cenatours with bodkyns. This Cassybelan died withowt heyre of his body, and is buryed at York.

¶ **Tenēcius**, .ii. sō of Lud, reinid next. He gouernid well the lād .viii. yere.

¶ **Kibelinus**, sō to Totenēcius, reynid next. In his time, Jesu Crist was born ; frō ŷ creaciō of the world .v.M.C.xc.ix.

¶ **Guiderus**, sō to Kimbeline, reinid next. He was a myghty mā, and of hie hert. He denyed ŷ tribute to be payd to Rome ; wherfor Claudius, ēperour of Rome, cā ī to Englād with a grete host of Romainys, and gaf battele to ŷ kyng ; and a Romain callyd Hamond changyd his armys, and preuely cam to ŷ kyng, and slew hym traitorously ; and after ŷ, Aruiragus, ŷ kyngis broder, slew Hamond, and cast hym into a water, which was therfor callyd Hamond Hauyn, where now Sowth Hampton is set ; wherof ŷ toun toke furst his name. This Claudius wane agayn ŷ trybute to Rome, as the boke of Polycronicō affyrmyth. But yet, after ŷ detli of Guiderus, Aruiragus toke to wyff Claudius doughter, callyd Genwissa, where by pese was made, and ŷ tribute to Rome was releassid, saue onely fealte. This Claudius byldyd the towne of Glocester.

¶ **Aruiragus**, the yōger sō of Kibelynus, and broder to Guiderus,

was thē made king ŷ yere of Cryst .xliiii. He was hardy and wyse. He byldid cytis and townis, and subduid the peple by good laws and iustyce, ŷ all mē dyd gretly dred and fere hī, and also loue hym. He denied the tribute and fealte to be payd to Rome; wherfore Vaspasianus was sent frō Rome in to Brytteyn with a great power, whō Aruiragus incoūteryd in playn batteyll besyd Oxonford, where many of both partes were slayn, ŷ nō coud tell who had the victory. But, ō the morow, pease was made by the mediacyō of ŷ queen Gēwissa; and Aruiragus submyttyd him selfe to the empyre, and was after gretly belouyd by the hole senate, and rulyd the land by so good lawis ŷ all Europa spake of hym honour.

¶ **Maurus**, sone to Aruiragus, was made nexte kyng of Bryttayne: ŷ yere of Cryst .lxxiiii. In his tyme came one Roderyk to Bryttayne, with a grete nomber of people, called Pictis, which of olde tyme were named Gotes; but Maurus gaue hym batayle anone, and slewe hym in Westmerlande, at Staynesmore; and the people ŷ fled, made after ŷ humble request to Maurus, whiche accepted them to grace, and gaue thē a wast countre in ŷ farthest ende of Skotlande, called Catenesey; but ŷ Brytons dysdeyned to gyue theyr doughters to thē in maryage, therfore they aquaynted thē with Irysshmen, and maryed theyr doughters; therfore ŷ lande, as appereth in Policronicō, was fyrst called Irelande, and after Pictauia, and lastly Skotlande. After ŷ, this Maurus cōtynued in loue with ŷ Romainys, and payed his trybute to Rome, and ruled Bryttayne, doynge good justyce; and after dyed, and lyeth at Carlell.

¶ **Coelus**, son to Maurus, was made next kyng of Bryttayne: the yere of Cryste .C.xxvi. Because he was brought vp in youth among the Romainys, he louyd thē, and kept pease with thē in his tyme, and payed tribute. He was welbelouid of his people for his liberalite, and he suffred the ryche to kepe theyr ryches, and dyd grete almys to the poor and nedy.

¶ **Lucius**, son to Coelus, was, after his father, kyng of Brittain: the yere of Cryste .C.lxxx. He sēd to Eluterus, pope of Rome, to be crystynyde, which send in to Bryttayne .ii. legattis, one callyd Faganus, the other Damianus, which baptisyd the kyng and þe people. In that tyme there were .iii. archflāmīs and .xxxviii. flāmyns of the panym fayth, which thē were chaungyd in to .iii. archbyshoppis and .xxviii. byshoppis; one was þe archbyshop of Lōdō, þe other of York; þe .iii. of Gloceter, which York yet cōtinuith, but the other were after chaungyd, and so all the ydols in the panym temples were dystroyed, and the temples were dedicate and made churchys of the crystē feayth. This Lucyus, as sō wryters afferme, reynid .lxxviii. yere, and after dyed without issue, and is buried at Gloceter. After the dethe of Lucius, ther was grete debate in the lande, that many yeres after ther was no king, and the Pictis and other ennemis invadid the land. Therefore Seuerus, emperour of Rome, cam to Brittē, with .ii. legions of men, to kepe them subiectes, and to deffende the lande, and droue them that resistyd by yonde Doram, and made a grete dicke and wall of torues, from the est see to the west see. This Seuerus had .ii. sonnes, Basianus and Getanus, and fell sike at Yorke, and dyed. But, after þe story of Bryttayns, one Fulgēcus, with a grete power of þe Pictis, fought agaynst Seuerus, and slew hym in opē batell.

¶ **Basianus**, calid Caracalla, sone to Seuerus, whos moder was a Britten, with helpe of the Brittons, as þe Britteyn story shewith, fought ageynst his brother Getanus, whos moder was a Romayn, and slewe hym in batell, and soo was made kynge of Brytteyn. But other storyes affyrm, that Getanus was slayne at the cytte of Edissa, or Emea, fyghtyng agaynst the Parthes. This Basianus, after this, went to Rome, and ther was made emperour; and after, as diuers cronacles aferme, was sleyn at the seyde citte of Edyssa. But þe Brytten story affirmith þe he was sleyn ī Britteyn by Carācius.

¶ **Carācius**, a Brittain, born of low degree, cam to Rome, and there had auctorite to him giffyn to rule þe land of Brittain, and

entred in to Brittain, and did great pyllage. He shewyd the Brytons that if they wold make him king he wold deffed them frō the Romainys; and so they made him king: the yere of Crist .CC.xviii.; and yet, because he was not able to deffend the land from the Pictis, he gaue to the Pictis the cuntrey of Albania in pease, now callyd Skotland.

¶ **Alectus**, a Romain, was then sent in to Brytteyn, with .iii. legions of men, which slewe Carancius in playn batell, and Alectus crouned kyng: the yere of Crist .CC.xxxii.; and after that, he ponishid the Bryttōs so sore, that they chase one Asclepidotus to be theyr king, which then was duke of Cornewall.

¶ **Asclepiodotus**, as sone as he was chosyn kyng, the yere of Cryst .CC.xxxii. cam with a great power agaynst Alectus, to London, where Alectus, with mych of his people were slayn. But one Gallus, after that, with help of the Romainys that were laft alyue, kept the cyte; but they were so sore besegyd that, at y last, they were ouercome, and Gallus was slayne, and cast in a water there whych after was callyd Galbroke, after his name, and now callyd Walbrōke. And whē this Asclepiodotus had thus vāqueshyd the Romainys, he held the land in pease, and rulyd the Bryttayns with good justyce a certeyne seasō, tyll at the last one Coyl, duke of Colchester, arose agayns hym, and slew hym in pleyn batell.

¶ **Coyll**, duke of Colchester, was then made kyng: the yere of Cryste .CC.lxii. He was fader to Seynte Helene. In his tyme, Cōstancius, which late before had conqueryd Spayne, cam from Rome, with a great people, in to Brytain, to subdew y Bryttayns, of whō Coyll beīg a ferd, gaue hym Helene, his doughter, to wyfe; wherby pease was made, and Coyll dyed with in a monyth after.

¶ **Cōstācius**, because his wyfe Helen was next heyr, was the made kyng: the yere of Cryste .CC.lxxxix. Thys Helen fōūd the

crosse where vppon Cryst suffred his passyō. Thys Constancyus maryed Nopces, doughter of the kyng of Cipres, in Perse, whych was his furst wyfe, and by her had a son callyd Costus, ŷ was father to Seynt Kateryne. Thys Cōstans dyed in Brittain, and is buryed at Yorke.

¶ **Constātine the Graūt**, son of Constācyus and Helen, was next kyng of Great Brytteyn: the yere of Cryste .CCC.ix. and there welbelouyd, because he was born in Brytton, and there dyd good justyce. He came from Britteyn to Rome at ŷ īstāce of diuers of ŷ Romayns, and there droue one Maxēce out, which had vsurpyd the empyre; and at the last this Maxence was slayne, and Constantine made ēperour, lyuyng his fader Cōstās. Some storyes afferme ŷ he was the furst that euer gaue landis and possessyons to the church of Rome. But this Constantyne, at the tyme of the deth of his fader, was occupied in the warrys in Gallia, and was emperour before ŷ he was kyng of Bryttayn.

¶ **Octavius**, duke of Cornwall, after the departing of Constātine, made hym self kyng of Bryttayn: the yere of Crist .CCC.xxix. and slew them that Constantine had made gouernours. Wherfore Cōstā-tine sēd ouer one Traherus, or Trabem, which made grete war agaynst Octavius, and droue hym out of the lād; and Traherus was king for a season. But afterward Octavius, by the ayd of Gombertus, king of Norway, which sēd with hym a grete nūber of people, ēterid in to the realme, and slew Traherus, and so recouerid his kyngdome agayn, and hild it in pease long tyme. Therefore this Traherus is not acōūptid amōg the kīgis of Brittain. This Octavius had no heyr but a doughter, which, by councell of his lordis, was maryed to one Maximian, that came from Rome, which was vnclē sonn to Constantine.

¶ **Maximianus**, sō to Leonius, a Britteyn, vnclē to Saīt Helin, was next kyng: the yere of Crist .CCC.lxxxii. He cōqueryd the land Amoricā, ŷ now is callid Littell Britteyn, and slew ŷ kyng, with helpe

of the Britons, and gaue ý lond to Conon Moredak, a Briten, and so callyd it Litell-Brittayne; wherfore his people callid him ēperour. And after, Maximian went to Rome, and by the way subduyd a grete part of Germania, and a grete part of Gallia and Fraunce; wherfore the ēperours Gracian and Valentiniā made sore ware agayns hym, and cōmyng with a grete host; yet, for fere of Maximian, Valentine fled to Constantynople, and Gracian to Lyons, in Fraūce, where he was slayn. In this tyme, Conon Morodak send in to Gret Britteyn, to Dionotus, duke of Cornwall, to haue meydens of theyre owne naciō to be theyr wyfes; which, as Galfridus writeth, sēd to hī Vrsula, his doughter, and .xi.M. other meydēs; which, by tēpest of ý se, were driuē to a place ī Germania, amōg the Pagā people; where, on Gwanus, beīg king, and Melga, his brother, seīg theyr bewte, wold haue deuoured thē; and because Vrsula and her maydens wolde not cōsent thereto, they were therfore put to deth, at a place where now ý cyte of Coleyn is sett; but other storyes, as Jacobus Philipus, and Anthonius sey, ý they shuld not be sent furth of Gret Bryttayne, nor martired about ý tyme, but in the time of Mercianus, emperour. This Gwanus and Melga were sent by the sayd emperours, Gracian and Valentinian, into Grete Bryttayne, which there dystroyd churches of Crytys fayth, and slew ý people; wherof Maximiā hauīg knolege, sēt a knyght of his thider, callyd Gracianus, which droue out Gwanus and Melga, and deffendyd and kept the land to the vse of Maximian. In his time Theodosius, ēperour of the Est, with a grete power drofe Maxymian in to a towne in Italy, callid Aquilla, where he was takī and hedid; aft whos deth, Gracianus, beīg in Brytayn, herīg therof, a non made hī self there kīg.

¶ Graciā, after ý deth of Maximiā, was made kyng of Bryttayne: the yere of Cryste .CCC.xc. and after that, was so cruell, and vsid sich tirranny and execucōn vppō the Britteyns, ý at the last they rose agaynst hym by one assent, and slew hym, after that he had reynynd there .iiii. yere.

¶ After the dethe of Gracyan, as Galfridus affermeth, the fore-sayd kynge Gwanus assembled a grete power of Skottes, Pictis, Norways, and Danes, and came agayne in to Brytayne. But other wryters make no mencyon whether Gwanus were leder of them or not. But trouthe it is that they dyd then more harme then before; for they destroyed all the crysten peeple, that none durste name Cryst Jhesu but he was put to dethe. But Policronicon affermeth that after the dethe of Gracyan, the Romainys sente a knyght called Cōstantyne to haue the rule of Grete Brytayne; but, because he was demed an enemy to the emperour, Honorius, the emperour sente another knyght, called Constancius, in to Grete Brytayne, whiche slewe Constantyne in playne batayle; and after ȳ, the Brytons were vexed agayne by the Pictis and other straungers, dyuers times, ȳ, at the request of the Brytons, the Romainys sente to thē dyuers legyons of men dyuers tymes, whiche chased the Pictis ouer the Skottisse see, and made a wal of stone in ȳ same place where before Seuerus had made a wal of torues, and after ȳ the Romainys departed; and yet then soone after the Pictis and Skottes entred agayne, and brake ȳ wall before made, and spoyled ȳ coūtre, ȳ the lande all this whyle was in grete mysery, bothe batayle, derth, dethe, and without a kynge by the space of .xxx. yere and more, wherefore they sente letters to Rome; and also they sende an embasset to Aecius, kynge of Fraunce, and leuetenaunt to the emperour Honorius, whiche retourned agayne without comforte; wherefore one Guitellinus, bysshop of London, as Galfryde wryteth, wente to Lytell Brytayne for helpe, to the kynge Aldowinus, whiche kynge sente his broder Constantyne, with .xij.M. men, with the bysshop in to Grete Brytayne; and when the Brytons herde therof, a grete nombre of thē arose with Cōstantyne, and gaue batayle to ȳ Pictis, whiche were paynims of beleue, and destroyed thē, and droue thē out; wherefore ȳ Brytons made Cōstantyne kynge of Grete Brytayne.

¶ **Constantine**, thus beyng kynge, the yere of Cryst .CCCC.xxxiiii. Crystendome begayn agayn, as Galfridus writyth. He toke a wyfe ȳ was of the noble blood of the Romainys, and had by her .iii. sonis, ȳ is to sey, Constans Aurilambrose, or Aurelius, Ambrosius, and

Vter Pendragō. Cōstans, the eldyest son, was made a mōk at Winchester. This Cōstātine was sleyn by treson of a Pict, whych was contynually in his court, and welbelouid of the kyng, and myght dayly come to his presence.

¶ **Cōstans**, son of Constantyne, as Galfridus writyth, was takyn out of religyō, and made kyng, the yere of Cryst .CCCC.xliii. by meanis of Vortiger, erle of Essex, to whō ŷ kīg gafē all ŷ rule; wherfore he causid a .C. knyghtis of the Pictis to be reteynyd for the kyngis howshold seruātys, as a garde for the kyngis persō, whych people he knew well were vnstable and apt to all myschefe. Wherfore Vortiger, by maruelous secret subtyll meanis, imagening ŷ kīngis distrucciō, chyryshid those knyghtis aboue all other, and gaue them gret gyftis, and oft tymis seyde to them, that yf he were more able of land he wolde better rewarde them; wherby the knyghtis had him in suche fauour, that they slew the king in a night, to the intēt to haue Vortiger kyng, and brought his hed vnto Vortiger. This Vortiger thē, because he wold opteyn the loue of the Briteyns, letid as thoughe he had ben wroth with that dede, and sodenly toke those .C. knyghtis, and furst put them in pryson, and after causid them to be put to deth by the order of the law; wherfore the Brytteyns did chose Vortiger kyng.

¶ **Vortiger** was thus made kyng: the yere of Crist .CCCC.xl.viii. Thā they that had the kepyng of the .ii. children, Aurilambros and Vter Pēdragon, as Galfridus writyth, went with the children in to Lityll Bryten. Anon after, ŷ frēdes of these .C. knyghtis cam in to ŷ lād to be reuēgid vppon Vortiger; wherfore he ferid them, and also ferid the cōmīg of the .ii. children. In this tyme, that is to sey, the yere of Crist .CCCC.l. one Engest, and his broder Horsus, cā frō Germania into Briteyn, with a grete multitude of the people of the Saxons, which cam from theyr cōtrei bycause they had to much people; wher of the kyng hering was very glad, and reseuyd them well; and after, with theyr help, ouercam the Pictis. How be it that Holy Bede, ŷ wrote Historia Ecclesiastica Gentis Anglorū, spekyth

nothing þ this Constantyne shuld come out of Litill Brittain, nor of his .iii. sōnis, Cōstās, Aurelius, and Vter; but he sayth, Vortiger, beīg kyng of Bryttayn in the tyme of this mysery, send for the Saxons for help; wheruppō Engest and Horsa cam to hym wyth a great multitude of Saxons, and help the Bryttons agaynst theyr enmys. Also, after this, Vortiger married Engest his doughter, callid Ronwē, and gaue to Engest þ cōtrei of Kēt; wherfore þ Brytteyns were wrothe, and put down Vortigerus, and crowned Vortimer, his sonne, kyng.

Vortimer was made kīg of Bryteyn: the yere of Cryst .iiii.C.lxiiii. He gaue .iiii. battels to Engest, and at þ last droue hym owt of the land; wherof his doughter Ronwyn was sad, and causyd Vortimer to be poysonyd. Then the Bryttons, by comen assent, made Vortiger kyng agayne. Anon after, Engest cam agayn in to Englonde, wyth myche pepull, to clayme hys cōtrei Kent; where vppon, there was a day of trewe takyn, þ Vortiger and he shuld mete; but Engest made hys folkes pryuyly to put knyffys in theyr hose, and at a certayn wach word, which was ‘nempnith youre sexis,’ euery Saxon drew his knife and slew a Brytton, and there Vortiger was takyn and put in pryson. Yet some wryters sey that these Bryttōs were sleyn in Engestis castell, where he desiryd the kyng to dyner; and so, for sauegarde of his lyfe, he gaue .iii. prouincis vnto Engest and to his pepull; and Vortiger and hys pepull went to Walys. One of these provyncys was Kent, where Engest dwelt hym selfe, and there was furst kyng; a nother was Essex; and the thyrd was Estangles, that ys, Northfolk and Suffolk. Thys Engest toke vppon hym to be kyng of Kent, þ yere of Crist .iiii.C.lxxvi. and cōmaūdyd his own contrei, Kent, to be callyd Engest land; where of Englonde toke first his name. But some sey þ Egbertus was þ fyrst that cōmaūdyd all þ hole land to be callyd Englonde, as shalbe shewyd afterward. But yet, long tyme before the cōmyng of Egbert, þ peple were callyd Angles, as apperyth by Holy Bede, and other historyers, whych were lōg before þ tyme of the seyde Egbert.

Æ Engest,



King of Kent. Æ

¶ Thys Engest, when he had obteynyde victory, dystroyed ÿ churches of Crystendome. He sent for mo Saxons to inhabyte the land, whych was deuydyd in .iiii. mo kyngdomys, as how and when they began here after shalbe shewyd. Yet, after this victory of Engest, Aurylambrose, and Vter, hys brother, as Galfridus wrytyth, cam in to England wyth mych people, to whom ÿ Bryttons resortyd, and gaue battell to Engest, where Engest was slayne. But Polycronycō and other afferme that Engest kept hys own lād, Kēt, in pease and warr, and dyed in hys bed; and Otta, hys son, rulyd, after hym, there .xxiiii. yere. But all stories afferme that Aurelius besegyde Vortyger in a castell in Walys, and brent hym and all that was therein, and chasyd the Saxōs frō the .ij. prouyncys of Estāgles and Essex. But Beda affyrmith that thys Aurelius shuld be a Romain.

¶ Aurylambrose, or Aurelius Ambrosius, was then crounyd kyng of Bryttayn: the yere of Cryst .iiii.C.lxxx. He had many cōflyctys wyth the Saxons, and sped dyuersly. In thys tyme, one Ella, a Saxon, cam in to the south parte of Bryttayne, and slew many Bryttons, and there made hym selfe furst kyng of Southe Saxons, .s. Southsex, the yere of Cryst .iiii.C.lxxx. And after hym reynyd there his .iii. sonnys, Symen, Idlenkingus, and Eissa. Also in thys tyme one Uffa began furst to be kyng in Estangles, the yere of Cryst .iiii.C.xc.ii. whych people therfore were callyd Vffynys.

S Ella. S

A Uffa. A

¶ Thys Aurylābrose dystroyd the Panym lawys, and reedyfyed churchys of Crystendome. He was poysonyd at Wynchester, and was buried at Stoneheng, vnder the grete stonys; whych stonys the Bryttons say ý one Merlyon, which was begotin of a womā by the deuyll, brought out of Yrelād by the craft of magyk; whych dyuers men thynk stondyth nother with good fayth nor reasō. And also the Bryttons say that thys Marlyon told and wrote many prophesyes, wheron they gretely beleue. But other clerkis and grete lernyd men gyue lyttyll credēce to them. And also they sey that those stonis were neuer brought out of Yreland by Merlion, but ý they were made by craft of men, as of semēt and mortar, made of flynt stonys. One reasō they alege therto, because those stonis be so hard that no yryn tole wyll cut them, without grete bysynes; and also they be of one facyon and bygnes, saue only there be .ii. sortis, and so most lykly to be caste and made in a molde; and that men thynke it a thyng almoste vnpossyble to get so many grete stonys owte of anny quarre, or rokk, that shold be so herd, so equall of bygnes and fassyon. A nother reason, they sey ý it is not well possyble to haue so many gret stonis to be all of one color and of one greyn thorow and in euery place, but that some stone shuld be more darker of colour in one place or a nother, or at the lest haue some vaynys of other colours in them, as grete stonis of merbell and other gret stonis comynly haue. But these stonis at Stonehenge be all of one gryt, without chaunge of colour, or vayne, and all of one facyon; therfore many grete wysemen suppose them to be made of a mortar of flynt, or other stonys.

¶ Uter Pendragon, broder to Aurelyus, was next made kyng of Brytteyn: the yere of Cryste .v.C. He louyd one Igwarne, or Igorne, wyfe to Garloys, duke of Cornewall, and therfore made war vppō hym, and slew hym; and after maryed the sayde Igwarne, and by her had a son callyd Arthur. And after this, Vter was poysonyd.

¶
 S Symen. Idlenkyncus. Cissa. S
 A A

¶ **Arthur**, sone to Vter Pendragon, as Galfridus writith, was next kyng of ð Britteyns: the yere of Cryst .v.C.xviii. Of thys Arthur is rehersed, by Galfryde, a lōg story, whych from other wryters is gretly dyscordant. How be it Beda, that wrot *Eclesiastica Historia Gentis Anglorū*, about ð yere of Cryst .vii.C.xx. whych wrote of the Bryttayne kyngys reynyng both before the tyme of Arthur and at the tyme of Arthur supposyd; and of the Britteynis kyngis after the tyme of Arthur; and also of the Saxō kyngys reynyng both before ð tyme and after; and yet hespekyth nothyng of Arthur. And Willm's de Regibus seyth that this Arthur is he of whom the Welchemen tell fantasies and fablys; but yet this Galfridus wrytyth that thys Arthur fought .xii. batteylls agaynst the Saxons, and in all those had the vycory. But yet he myght not clerely auoyed them the lande; but that they kepte theyr cūtreys; for both in Arthurs tyme and after, they styll incresyd. But some wryters aferm that they held theyr cuntreys as trybutaryes to Arthur. This Arthur slew, in one daye, as Galfridus wrytyth, .C.xl. Saxons, by help of our Lady, whose image he bare in his shyld. In the .v. yere of Arthur, supposyd the yere of Cryst .v.C.xxii. the kyngdome of West Saxons began, vnder a Saxon callyd Cerdicus, whiche reynyng long kyng there; and Kenricus, hys sonne, reynyng after hym. Wyth thys Cerdicus, Arthur had great war long tyme; but finally he gaue to the seyde Cerdicus, as apperyth in *Polycronycon*, .ii. cuntreyes, Hampshyre and Somerset. Thys Arthur had great war contynually wyth the Saxons; but at the last, as apperyth by the seyde Galfridus wrytyng, he brought them in to suche frame that he was accōptyd for chefe lord of all Brytteyn; and whē he had set the land in some quietnes, he gaue the rule therof to hys neuwe Mordred, and with a grēte army sayld in to Fraūce, where, as Galfride wrytyth, he wrought wonders. But the French cronycles, and the wryters of the Romainys, speke nothyng therof, nor that he shuld slee Lucius, the emperours lieutenaunt; for they sey ther was no such Lucius lieutenaunt to the emperour at that tyme, nor long before, nor long after. Therefore some suppose that Galfryde wrote that story for affecciō, be cause he was a Welchman, borne in the tyme of kyng Henry the .ii. syth the

cōquest. And yet, he that wyl now go to the shryne of Seynt Edward, at Westmynster, shall there fynd hēgyng in the shryne the prynt of a seale in red wax, about the border wherof is wryttyn thus: ‘*Arthurus patricius Brittānie Gallie and Dacie īperator* ;’ which they afferm was the seale takyn from an old dede of some gyft or graūt made to ŷ house by kīg Arthur, wherof ŷ perchemēt and wrytīg for age is wastyd and putrefyed. But yet some mē thynk it but a thyng faynyd of late by some mā hauyng effecciō to Arthur; and that for dyuers resōs; one is, for they say ŷ tyme of Arthur supposid was before ŷ Westmīster was foūdid, and byld vppō a wylde busshy place, full of thornis, then callyd Thorney, which was in ŷ tyme of Sebertus, kyng of Essex, which was after ŷ deth of Arthur more thā .xl. yere; so ŷ Arthur coud make to that howse no such graunt. And also they say that it is not possyble ŷ that wax shulde last so long vnto this day, which is almost .M. yere. And also they sey that ŷ tyme of Arthur supposid, nor .v.C. yere after, they vsyd to put no seale of wax to theyr dedis nor wrytyngys, but ŷ vse began syth ŷ cōquest of Wyllyā Cōquerour; for at the tyme of the seyde cōquest they vsyd but only to subcrybe theyr handis to dedys, wythout any seale of wax, as apperyth at this day in dyuers abbeys in Englonde, of the graūtis by dedys made by Seynt Edward, and dyuers other, to which ye shall neuer fynd seale of wax, but only subcrypcyon of theyr handis. But yet, all this notwithstanding, I wyl nother denye the seyde story of Arthur, nor exort no man presysly to affyrme it; but to let euery man be at his lyberte to beleue ther in what he lyst. But yet forthere, some sey that when Arthur was out of the realme, this Mordred was desyrous to be kyng, and with grete gyftis drew to hym Cerdicus, kyng of West Saxons; by whose assent he was crounyd at London kyng of Brittain, and

K	Otta	K
S		S
A		A
W	Cerdicus	W

Cerdicus crounyd kyng of West Saxons at Winchester, to whō this Mordredus gaue .vii. other prouincis .s. Southsex, where Elle, and his .iii. sōnis beforseyd reynynd, and Southery Barcshe, Whilshire, Dorset, Deeuōshire, and Cornwall. Sone after this, Cerdicus dyed; where of hering, Arthur cam in agayne, and landyd at Sandwych, where Mordrede gaue hym strong batteyl; but Arthur at lenght wan the land vpon hym; wherfore Mordred repayryd to Wynchester, and wyth new sodears, and gaue to Arthur anewe battell, wher Mordred was put to the wors; and yet, thyrdly, he gaue to Arthur a nother battell, be syde Glastonbury, wher Mordred was slayn, and Arthur woūdyd to deth, after he had reynynd ouer the Bryttayns, as Gallfridus wrytith, .xxvi. yere. This Arthur is buried at Glastonbery, wher his bonis were found in the tyme of king Henry the .ii. in a tōbe of stone, with a crosse of led lyeng therin; vppon which crosse was wrytyn thus: ‘Hic iacet inclitus Arthurus quondam Brittannie Rex et Guenora, vxor sua secunda in insula Auellona.’ Also after Cerdicus, Kenricus, his sone, was kyng of Weste Saxons. Also, sone after this, the kyngdome of Soth Saxons was subduid to the West Saxons, tyll the tyme of Ethelwold, which also was slayne by Cadwaleder, kyng of West Saxons. About thys tyme, Otta, kyng of Kent, dyed, and they were after y with out kyng aboue. xl. yere, til the tyme of Ethelbertus.

Cōstātinus, son of Cador, duke of Cornwale, by assēt of the Brytteyns, was then made kyng of Brittainys: the yere of Cryst .v.C.xliii. agaynst whom the sōnys of Mordred made war. But at the last, as Galfride sayth, he slew one of them in y church of Sent Aphiabill, in Winchester, and the other in a hous of freris, in London. But that seyng of Galfryde shuld not seme to be trew; for than there

H **H**
S **S**
A **A**
M **M**

were no freris in all Britteyn. Yet, after this war on Aurelyus, Conanus, cosyn to Constantyne the kyng, made warre agayns the kyng, and slew hym in the felde.

¶ **Aurelyus Conanus**, was made kyng of Brittons: the yere of Cryst .v.C.xlvi. He was a man of lyght credence, beleuyng euery furst tale, which was his grete hurte. He toke hys vncle, that shulde haue bene kyng, and put hym in pryson, and slew his .ii. sonnys, and reynynd but .ii. yere, leuyng after hym a sonne, callyd Vortiporius. In the tyme of this Aurelyus, the yere of Cryst .v.C.xlvii. one Ida, a Saxon, began to reyn as kyng, in Northūberland, which was deuydyd in two partes; one was Deyra, whych conteynynd from the water of Humber to the water of Tyne; the other was Brennicia, whych was from Tyne to the Scottyshe see. But one Ella reyned as kyng in Deyra, with in .iii. yerys after that Ida began his reyne, and in the tyme of Vortiporius. But in processe of tyme, both were one kyngdome. To this domynyon also were adioynynd York shyre, Derby, and Nottyngame. ¶ In thys countrey reynynd dyuers kyngis, somtyme one somtym an other, as here after by the namys ther vnder doth apere.

¶ **Vortiporius**, sō of Aurelius, was next kyng: y yere of Cryst v.C.xlviii. He was a vycorious knight, and, in dyuers battayls dyscōfetyd the Saxons. In this tyme, Ella, before seyde, in the South part of the kyngdom of Northumberland, callyd Deyra, as before is shewyd, was there furst kyng, and sone after Ida dyed; after whom succedyd Adda, and after hym Clappa, and after hym Thedulphus,

R	.....	R
S	.....	S
A	..... Redwaldus.	A
W	..... Ceolmus and Cuta.	W
R	.... Ida and Ella, Adda, Clappa, ... Thedulfus.	R

and after hym Fretulphus, and after hym Theodricus. About this tyme, Uffa, kyng of Estangles, died, and Redwaldus, his sō, succedid hym. Also about thys tyme, Kēricus, kyng of West Saxons, died, and his .ii. sonns, Ceolmus and Cuta, succedid hym, which, after the deth of Otta, kyng of Kent, expulsyd all the Brytteyns out of Kent; which Cuta was after sleyn, at a battell agaynste the Bryttayns.

Malgo, a duke, and neuw to Aurelius Conanus, was made next kyng of Bryttayn: the yere of Cryst .v.C.lii. He manfully wythstode the Saxons, that they damagyd not that land greatly; wherof he had possession. In his tyme Ethelbertus began to reyn, as kyng of Kent, and gaue battell to Ceolmus, sone of Kenricus, then kyng of West Saxons. It was the furst battell betwen the Saxons. This Ceolmus wann of the Brytteyns diuers cites, and at the last chasyd Malgo, and hym pursuyd; whych Malgo, so dyscōfytid, dyed, after he had reynyd .xxxv. yere. Also, sone after the deth of Malgo, Ceolmus dyed; after whō, his sonn Ceolricus succedyd kyng of West Saxons; whych lyuyd not long after. After whom succedyd his brother, Chelwolphus. Also, about thys tyme, Theodricus, kyng of Brēnicia, and Ella, kyng of Deyra, dyed; after whom, Ethelricus succedyd as kyng of all Northumberland. In thys tyme, as some auctours affyrme, began the kyngdome of Essaxōs, vnder a Saxon callid Sleda. After hym, Erkinwinus, which was crystenyd afterward. But other affyrme that Sebertus was the furst kyng in Essex, and that the oder before hym where as chefe rulers, and no kyngis. Also sone after this tyme, Ethelbertus, kyng of Kent, waxyd so vycoryous y he subduyd almost all the lād, vnto the water of Humber, in to his dominion.

K	.....	Ethelbertus.	.....	K
S	.....		.....	S
A	.....		.....	A
U	.....	Ceolricus.	.....	U
N	.....	Fretulfus. ... Theodricus. ... Ethelricus. ... Ethelfridus.	.....	N
E	.....	Sleda.	.....	E

Also about this tyme, Ethelricus, kyng of Northumberland, dyed, and Ethelfridus, his sō, succedyd him, whych dystroyd many Brittōs, and slew .liij. mōkis of Bāgar, at a battell at West Chester, whych mōkis were Bryttayns, and lyuyd by the labour of theyr handis, and cam thydyr only to pray for the Brytteyns.

¶ Caracticus was next kyng of Bryttons: the yere of Cryste .v.C.lxxxvi. He was yuell belouyd of hys own Bryttōs, wherfore they excytyd the Saxons to make war vppon hym; which Saxons send for Gurmūdus, kyng of Ireland, by whose help they draue Caractycus in to Cambria, now callyd Walys, and dystroyed the church of Crystis feyth, that the byshop and prestis fled and hyd them for fere.

K	K
S	S
A	A
W	W
Chelwolfus.	Chelwolfus.
N	N
Erkinwinus.	Erkinwinus.

About thys tyme begā ŷ kīgdom of Est Saxōs, vnder Sebertus: ŷ yere of Cryst .vi.C.xiiii. Also somewhat before this tyme .ii. cheldern of Angles were sēt to Rome, to be solde; whych, whē Seynt Gregory, beyng a Monk, saw theyr bewty, seyde they myght well be callyd angles, for they were lyke angelles. He therfore, after ŷ he was pope, hauyng cōpassyon ŷ theyr cūtre was not crystynyde, sent Seīt Austē thyder; whych came furst in to Kēt, and there cōuertyd kyng Ethelbert, and crystynyde hym, the yere of Cryst, after Bede and other wryters .v.C.xC.vi. and a grete part of ŷ cōtre of Kent; and after crystenid many .M. mō of ŷ Bryttons. Thys Ethelbert began the church of Polys, as some wryters afferme, and excityd a cytyzin of Londō to make a church in the worshyp of Sent Peter, in the west end of Londō, thē callyd Thorney, and now callyd Westminster. But other hystories

afferme ð Sebertus, kyng of Essex, fouðyd ð seyð abbey of Westmīster. Also, about this tyme, Redwaldus, kīg of Estāgles, was crystyned, whych sone after denyed ð feyth. Thys Seynt Austen made one Melytus bysshop of London, by whose prechyng Sebertus, kyng of Essex, was crystynyd.

¶ **Cadwānus**, a duke of North Wales, was, after ð deth of Carecticus, by ð Brytteyns made theyre kyng and gouernoure: in ð yere of Cryst .vi.C.xiii. In ð time of Chelwolphus, king of West Saxōs, he made strōg warre vppō Ethelfridus, kyng of Northūberland, and, as some sey, he slew hym. But some sey, that there was a pese made bytwyxt hym and Ethelfridus, whych cōtynued duryng theyre lyfes. But Giraldus Cābrēsis affermith that Edwyn, sō to Ella, kyng of Deyra, in Northūberland, slew Ethelfride, and kept the hole kyngdome of Northūberland in his owne hand .xvii. yere; and Oswold and Oswy, sonis to Ethelfridus, for fere, were by theyr wardēs sēt to Albania. Thys Edwyn was crystynyd by Synt Paulyn. Also, about this tyme, Eden, kyng of Scottis, ēterid in to Northūberland, wyth a grete army, whom this Ethelfridus incōterid, and slew the most part of the Scottis, ð frome that day, and .C. yere after, the Scottis durst neuer inuade the land. In whych batell Theobald, broder to Ethelfridus, was slayn.

¶ In his tyme .ii. sonnis of Cheolrycus, Kingilsus and Quichelynus, after the deth of theyr faders broder, Colwolfus, rulyd ioyntly the prīcypat of West Saxonis; which Kyngylsus was after sole king of West Saxons, and crystynyd by Saynt Byryne. Thys Kyngylsus

K	.....	K
S	.....	S
A	.....	A
W	..... Kingilsus.	W
E	..... Edwinus.	E
C	..... Sebertus.	C

fought oft agaynst the Britteyns. About this tyme the kyngdome of Mercya began, vnder one Penda, a Saxon: the yere of Cryst .vi.C.xxvi. which was gretest of the other .vi. and conteynynd from Huntynghon to London, and from the este see to the riuers of Syuerne and Dye. He had a sone callyd Wolpherus, which reyned after hym, and was crystyned. Also in this tyme, Orpewaldus, son to Redwaldus, kyng of Estāgles, was cōuertyd and crystenyd. ¶ Thys Edwyn was a noble man; therefore for dysdayn that Penda had to hym, Penda exeytyd Cadwan to make warre vpon hym; so that they .ii. assembled a grete hoste, and gaue to hym battell, where Edwine was slayn, after whose deth, Eufrycus, son of Ethelfrydus, was kyng of Brennieia, and Osryeus, son of Elfricus, brother to Ethelfridus, was kyng of Deyra; but anon after, they were both slayne of Cadwā. After whose deth, Oswold, seeōd son of Ethelfridus, was kyng of Brēnycya, whom Cadwā wolde haue subdyed, and made grete ware vpon hym, but Cadwan was ther slayn. About thys tyme dyed Ethelbertus, kyng of Kent; after whom reynynd hys son, Edwaldus, whych denyed Crystys feyth, and maryed hys faders wyfe; but after, he was conuertyd to Crystys feyth, by Seynt Laurence, suceessoure to Seynt Austen. Also about this tyme, Sebertus, kyng of Essex, dyed, and lefte .iii. sones, which denyed the fayth, and expulsyd Mellitus, byshop of Lōdon, from hys dyosyse; but, sone after, they were all slayne in a batteyll agaynst the West Saxons, and Segebertus made kyng of Essex, which was after ehrystynyd, by exortacyō of Oswy, kīg of Northūbers, and after was slayn, and Cuiehelmus made kīg. Also about this tyme, Orpewaldus, kyng of Estangles, son to Red-

K	.....	Edwaldus.	.....	K
S	.....		.....	S
A	.....	Orpewaldus.	.....	A
W	.....		.....	W
P	.....	Eufricus and Osricus.	.....	P
E	.....	Tres filii Seberti pagani.	.....	E
M	.....	Penda.	.....	M

waldus, was crystenyd, and after dyed; after whom succedyd his broder, Sigebertus.

¶ Cadwallus, or Cadwalin, son to Cadwā, was next made kīg of the Brytteyns: the yere of Cryst .vi.C.xxxv. He was a noble man, and made grete war vppon the Saxōs, and wan many townis and castellis of thē, and specially in Mercia, that Penda, beyng there kyng, was glade to sew to hym for pese; and some write, that Pēda lyffyd vnder his tribute, and after took part with Cadwall agayns the other Saxon kyngis. In this tyme, one Segebertus, kyng of Estāgles, was cristinid, and after betoke his kīgdome to one Edricus, his neuw, and made hem selfe a monk; and whā Pēda, kyng, warred in that contrey, this Segebart was brought to the felde, wher both he and Edricus were sleyn; after whose deth, one Anna was ther made kīg. Also about this tyme, Edwaldus, kyng of Kēt, dyed, and Excōbartus was made kyng, whiche there reuiued the fayth of Crist, whiche was sore appalid. He dystroyed the temples of fals goddis, and made there Lent to be fast. Also in this tyme, Kyngilsus, kyng of West Saxones, be came crystened of Seynt Biryne, bisshop, and after dyed; and Kenwallcus, his son, reynynd after hym, whych warrid oftymes agaynst ŷ Brittons, and put thē to the wors. Oswold, of whō I spake before, was ā holy man. But Pēda, which had disdayn at hym, and all other crysten pryncis, made warr vppon hym and slewe hym. After whose deth, God shewyd for hym many myracles. But, after one yere of his deth, Oswy, his yōger brother, recoueryd ŷ kyngdome of Brenicia; and anon after, he foude vnlefull menis, and slewe Oswyn, that was king of Deyra; whych Oswyne was sō to Eufrycus, eldest brother to Oswold; and toke to hym to be kyng of Deyra one Odilwaldus, son of Oswold, whych dyed before Oswy. About this time, Ciuchelmus, kyng of Essex, died; after whō succedyd Sigerus, and his broder Sebba, which both denyed the feyth. But Sebba was conuertyd by Seynt Erkynewald, and is buried in Paulys.

K	Excōbertus.	K
S		S
A	Edricus. Anna.	A
U	Comwalcus.	U
O	Oswy and Oswynus. . . . Oswynus, Odilwoldus. . . .	O
E	Cuichelmus. . . . Sigerus, Sebba.	E
M		M

¶ Also about this tyme, the South Saxōs rebellyd and refusyd to be vnder the West Saxons ; and sone after they made Ethelwold theyr kyng. Also, in this tyme, Penda made wār vppō Anna, kyng of Estāgles, and slew hym in opyn battell ; after whom succedyd his broder Ethellerus. And after that, Penda went to Northumberlāde, to the ētēt to slee Oswy, as he before had sleyn his broder Oswolde ; but Oswy profferid hym pese, and wolde haue gyffyn hym many gret gyftis, which Penda refusyd ; wherefore Oswy said, becawse this panym refusyth my gyftes, I shall offer them to God, yf it plese hym ; and there made a vow to God, that yf he had vycctory he wolde gyue his doughter to God, with sufficient possessiō to byld .xii. abbeyes ; and after that ioynyd battell, and Penda was there sleyn in opyn feld, and .xx. of hys chefe capteyns and his wyfe taken. After which victory, Oswy gaue thankis to God, and performyd his promise, and made Elfleda, his doughter, a nonne, and byldyd .xii. abbeyes, wherof .vi. were in Deyra and .vi. in Brenicia. This Oswy, after this victory, gouernyd the marchis and the South Saxōs .iii. yere, and gaue one of his douthers in mariage to Peda, son to Penda, and made hym to be crystynyd ; and then made hym kyng of South Marchys ; which was sleyn by treson of his wyfe. And after ȝ, the kyngdome fell to Wolpherus, ȝ other broder, which was cristinid. In this tyme, Excōbert, kīg of Kēt, died, and the kyngdome fell to Egbart, his son. Also, about this tyme, Ethellerus, kyng of Estangles, was slayne by the army of Oswy, kyng of Northūbers : after whom succeddyd his broder, Ethelwoldus : after whom reynynd Adulphus, son to Anna ; but how lōg he reynynd, and who succedyd him, I find not, for they were euer

subduyd by the kyngis of Mercia, vnto the tyme of the good kyng Seynt Edmunde.

K	.....	Egbertus.	.....	K
S	.....	Ethelwoldus.	.....	S
A	.....	Ethelerus.	.....	A
U	.....	Ethelwoldus.	.....	U
N	.....	Egfridus.	.....	N
E	.....		.....	E
M	.....	Peda.	.....	M

In this tyme begā gret deth ī Brytteyn, wherof many bysshopis died ; and ī this tyme, Oswy, thā sole kīg of all Northūberland, dyed, and Egfridus, his sō, was kīg after hym. And about this tyme, Cōwalcus, kīg of West Saxōs, dyed, and Kēwinus succedyd hī. This Kēwinus made gret war agaīst ſ Brittons, and had vycory. Also Egfridus made oft war agaynst them and the Pycdis, and had oft victory. But the Pycdis one tyme, by a polecy, fleīg bak, broght Egfride īto a strait, amōg moūteyns, where Egfridus was slayn, and a gret part of hys people ; after whose deth, a basterd brother of hys, callyd Alfridus, Notus, was made kyng of all Northumberland. Sone after this, Cadwall, kyng of Britteyns, dyed. But Polycronycon, nor none other auctour, shewyth any actys of Cadwall, as Galfryde doth ; nother of his beriall, nor of the image of brasse set vppon an horse of brase at Ludgate ; or ſ Cadwalladrus, whych Bede callyth Cedwalla, shuld be his son ; therefore I let all that matter pas.

K	.....		.....	K
S	.....		.....	S
A	.....	Adulfus.	.....	A
U	.....	Kenwynus.	.....	U
N	.....	Alfridus.	.....	N
E	.....		.....	E
M	.....	Wolferus.	.....	M

Cadwalladrus, which Bede callyth Cedwalla, began to rule the Bryttons, as Galfryde affyrmith, \hat{y} yere of Cryst .vi.C.lxxxiiii. Thys Cadwalladrus, by Galfryde, is callyd sonn of Cadwall; but Willms de Regibus seyth he was kyng of West Saxōs next after Kenwyn, descendyng lyneally of the noble blod of Germainys. Also Holy Beda, whiche was lyuynge the same tyme, affyrmith that thys Cedwalla, or Cadwalader, was kyng of West Saxōs, dyscendyng of the kyngis blod of \hat{y} people callyd Geuissi, which he expounyth to be West Saxons, whyce .ii. seyngeys may wel accord, because \hat{y} West Saxōs cā out of Germania. This Cadwallader, as Beda affyrmith, for deuocion, forsoke his kyngdome, and came to Rome, and there, of the pope Sergyus, was crystynynd; after whō succedyd hī one Hū, kīg of West Saxōs .xxx.vii. yere, which after forsoke hys kyngdome and also came to Rome. Also about this tyme, Sebba, kyng of Essaxōs was cōuertid to Crystys feyth, by Seynt Erkynwald.

Also Ranulphus, and other auctours, affyrme that Cadwalleder was kyng of West Saxons; and dyuers suppose that he myght be kyng both of Weste Saxōs and kyng of Bryttayns, and be inheritable to both; for West Saxons were next adioynyng to Cambria, wher the Bryttons dwelt. This Cadwalladrus made war vppō Lotharius, kyng of Kent, and dystroyd mych of that prouynce; in whych war Lotharius was slayne; after whose deth one Edricus was kyng of Kent. After that, Cadwalleder made war vppō Ethelwold, kyng of South Saxons, and slewe hym in playne batteyll, and made hys prouynce subduyd to hym. In thys tyme, the deth whych began in the tyme of Cadwall contynuyd so sore, and therwyth great darth, by \hat{y} space of .xi. yere; wherby the people at \hat{y} last were so mynyshyd \hat{y} vnnoth \hat{y} quyk bodys suffysyd to bery the dede. This Cadwallader, as Galfridus wrytyth, in the .iii. yere of hys reyn, whether it were only for deuocyon or for fleynge of the deth, went on pylgrimage to Rome, and there, by the pope Sergius, was professyd a monk, and theredyed, and was the last kyng of the blood of Brytteyns. Also Galfrydus wrytyth, that Iuor, son to Cadwalleder, and Iue, hys newewe, rulyd the Bryttaynsioyntly,

after the departyng of Cadwallader, and made great war agaynst the Saxons; but they could neuer preuaile. And after, þy Bryttayns were callyd Welch mē, of theyr duke and leder callyd Wallo, or Gwallo; or els of a quene of Walys, callyd Galaes. Also about this tyme, Wolpherus, king of Marches, dyed, after whō, succedyd hys broder Ertheldredus. But now, because þy Cadwallader, as it apperyth, was both kyng of Brittōs and of West Saxons, and all the other kyngdomys were subduyd to the West Saxons; therfore, in thys worke, I wyl procede vppon the lyne of West Saxons, and euer in tyme and order shew how euery one of the other kyngdomis endyd, and were subduyd to the West Saxōs, and how the name of this hole lād of Gret Bryttayn was changyd in to Englōd, which was in the time of Egbert, kyng of West Saxōs, as after shalbe declaryd. Also about this tyme, Ethelredus, kyng of Mercia, was made a monke; after whom succedyd in the kyngdome of Mercia, Kenredus. Also about this tyme, Lotharius, king of Kēt, was slayne by the South Saxōs, by the excityng of Edricus, son to Egbert, which succedyd hym; and, within a yere and a halfe, Edricus dyed, and Widredus, son also to Egbert, succedyd hym. Also about thys tyme, Alfridus Notus dyed, after whom succedyd Osredus; which was slayn by Cōredus, which succedid hym .ii. yere. After whom succedyd Offricus.

L **Lotharius.** **L**
P **P**
E **E**
M **Etheldredus.** **M**

I **Iue**, or **Jewe**, descendyng of the blod of West Saxons, as Willms de Regibus sayth, was next kyng of West Saxons, after Cadwallader, which made gret war vppon the Kentysh Saxons, that the men of Dorobernia, or Canterbury, grauntyd to Iue, for a recompence for the deth of Mulkyng, brother to Cadwallader, before slayne, .iii.M.li. This Iue, by the excityng of his wife Etheldreda, which was an holy woman and abbesse of Berkyng, gaue vp his kyngdome

to Ethellardus, hys newew, and toke a poore mannys wede, and in company of poore men went to Rome. Therfore this Iue shuld seme to be the same person that Beda callyth Hū, or Ine, cōsydering both the tyme of his reyne and goyng to Rome, and no variaunce but in wrytyng of the letters, as in taking .U. for .N.; and that this Iuor and Iue, of whō Galfridus spekith to be other persōs, and so all theyr seyngis may stand to geder. ¶ Hit is seyde that this Iue was cause ŷ ŷ Peter pens were grauntid to be payd of euery house in Englōd; but the cause therof is not knowen certayn; but som sey ŷ Ethelwold grauntid them furst. Also about this time, Offa, king of Essex, and Kenredus, kyng of Mercia, went to Rome, and were there professyd monkis; after whō succedyd in Essex, Sileredus, and in Mercia, Colredus.

K	Edricus.	K
N	Osredus.	N
E	Sileredus.	E
M	Kenredus.	M

¶ **Ethellardus**, the newew of Iue, began hys reyn ouer the West Saxōs the yere of Cryst .vii.xxiiii. Some men call him Etheldredus. In this tyme Offricus, or Osbrygh, reynyd in Northumberland, to whō Bede wrote the story callyd Historia Anglica; and some say to his successour Colwolcus.

¶ **Cutbertus**, the newew of Ethellardus, began his reyn ouer the West Saxons the yere of Cryste .vii.C.xxxix. In this tyme, Holy Bede, before spokyn of, dyed. In this tyme, Colwolphus, kyng of Northūberland, gaue vp his kyngdome to Egbertus, his cosyn, and was made a monk. This Cutbertus made oft war agaist Ethelwold, kyng of Mercia. Here is to be notyd, that many of these Saxons, kyngis, were holy men, and byldyd many churches, and foundyd many abbes, and indowyd them with gret land; and many of them liuyd vertuously, and so dyed, and now be takyn as holy sayntys. Also this Egbertus,

that was kyng of Northūberlād, forsoke his kyngdome for the loue of Cryst, and toke the tonsure of Seynt Peter and Pall. After whō succedyd his son Osulphus, which, with in a yere, was slayne by the Northumbers. After whō succedyd Moll Ethelwold; and, within .vii. yere, laft his kingdome to Helredus, whych, after .ix. yere, was expulsyd by the Northumbers, which made Ethelbert theyr kyng, which was expulsyd with in .v. yere, and Elwolphus made kyng, which was slayne. After whom succedyd Osredus, which sone after was expulsyd by the Northūbers, and Ethelredus made kyng, which was after slayne. And anon after, Egbert, kyng of West Saxons, subduyd them to his domynyon.

K	W ydredus.	K
N	O ffricus. C olwulfus. E gbertus.	N
E	E thelredus.	E
W	E thelwoldus.	W

Egbertus, cosyn to Cutbert, begā his reyn ouer the West Saxons, Ƴ yere of Cryst .vii.C.xlv. He was cruell and tyrānous to his subiectes, and tornyd theyr lawes and costumys after his one wyll, and put one of his lordis to deth, which aduertisyd him to be reformed; wherefore his subiectis, by one assent, wyth Ƴ eyd of one Kenulphus, deposyd hym; and he was after in such mysery that he, walkyng alone, without comfort, a swyne herd, whose lord he before had slayne, in reuenging his lordis deth, there slew the seyde Segebert. In his tyme Egberd was kyng of Northumberland.

Kenulphus, of the blod of Cerdicus, and son to Offa, king of Merchis, was king of West Saxōs, Ƴ yere of Cryst .vii.C.xlviii. He was a good man to his subiectis, and kept among them good pease. In his tyme, Offa slew a tyrāt callid Bomredus, that before had slayne Ethelwold, king of Mercia, and made him self king. After whose deth, this Offa, as neuew to Ethelwold, reynid there as king. He had warre with the Northumbers, and them subdued; and also had

war with Etheldred, which than tooke vppon hym to be king of Estangles, and toke him and smote of his hed. Also this Offa had warr with Egbert, kyng of Kent. Also this Offa chasid the Bryttons, or Welch men, in to Walis, and made a famous dich there callyd Of Dych, and a church callyd Of Church. He foundyd the abbeyes of Seynt Albons and Wynchcomb. In thys time, Egbert, kyng of Northumbers, renoūcid his kingdome and becam a monk. This Offa, when he had reynid .xxxix. yere laft his kingdome to his son Kenulphus, king of West Saxons, and went to Rome; which Kenulphus kept strongly his dominiōs agaynst all his enmies during his life; but at the last, one Clito, a kinsman of king Segebert, that before was deposid by the seyd Kenulphus, lay in wayt vppō Kenulphus, as he priuily was goyng to his paramour, and there slewe him; which Clito was immediat folowyd and slayne, and mich his company.

Æ Ethelbertus. Egbertus. Æ
 D . . Osulfus. Alol Ethelwold. Heleredus. Ethelbertus. D
 M Bomredus. Offa. M

¶ **Brygthrycus**, of the bloode of Cerdycus, furst kyng of West Saxons, began his reyne ouer the West Saxones the yere of Cryst .vii.C.lxxviii. One of his doughers was maryed to Offa, kyng of Marchys, by whose helpe before tyme he put owt of his rule Egbert, son of Alcumundus; which Egbert was then an vnder kyng, or ruler, in West Saxons; wherefore Egbert sayld into Fraūce, and there was in kyng Charles court duryng ſ lyfe of Brygthricus. The .ii. yere of Brygthrycus was seen grete wonder, for crossis lyke to blood fell vppon mennis clothis in the street, which some-expoūnyd betokenyd the cōmyng of the Danis; which Danis enteryd the land after, in the .ix. yere of Brygthricus; but he and ſ other kyng Saxons drof them out agayne. At that tyme, this Brygthrycus was poysonyd by hys wyf, namid Ethelburga, which, for fere therof, fled in to Fraūce, and after endyd her lyfe in shame and pouerte; and, for her sake, the kyngis of the land, and specially of the West Saxons, wold not suffer

theyr wyuis to set by them in placis of honor long tyme afterward. Also, after the deth of Kennulphus, kyng of West Saxons, as is before seyde, Egfertus, the other sone of Offa, was kyng of Mercia, and dyed with in half a yere. After whō succedyd Kennulphus; after whō succedyd his son Kenelmus, whych was wyth in few monythis martyryd and heddyd, by his sister, Quendrede. After that, Celwolp- phus, broder to Kenwolp- phus, reynyd in Marcya one yere, and thē was put out by one Bernulphus; whiche Bernulphus, with in thre yere after, was put out bi Egbart, kyng of Wessaxons, and slayn by the Estanglis; whos predesessors before had subduid the Estāgles. After whō, Ludicamus reinid .ii. yere in Mercia, and after, in a battell agayns the Agles, was slain. After whom, one Wiglasius toke vppō him to be king of Mercia, which sone after was subduid bi Egbart, king of Wessaxons, to whom he gaff it agayn, and so reynid there agayne .xii. yere, bering tribute to Egbart. After Wiglasius dyed, and Berthulphus was made king of Marcia, by Egbart, king of West Saxons, to whom he gaff tribute .viii. yere. After Berthulphus, succedid Burdredus, which was subdued, after he had reynid .xxiii. yere, by the Danis, and fled, and went to Rome; wherfor the Danis made one Chelwolp- phus ruler of Marcia, vnder the Danis; and so ther was no king in Marcia tyl long after ý Edward, king of West Saxons, sub- duid it to his domynyans.

K Cuthredus. Baldredus. **K**

R . . Elwolfus. . . Osredus. . . Ethelredus. . . Osbrigh and Ella. . . **R**

M . Egfertus. Kenulfus. Kenelinus. Celwolfus. Barnulfus. . **M**

Egbert,
of all



first King
England.

Egbert, the son of Alcumundus, as is before shewyd, began his reyne ouer the West Saxons the yere of Cryst .vii.C.xxv. This Egbert, whych was dryuyn owt by meanys of Brightricus, as is before rehersyd, when he had obteynyd the gouernaūce of this land, one Barnulphus, kyng of Mercia, had him in derysyō, makyng agaynst him gestes and rymys, whych Egbert for a tyme pacyētly sufred, tyll a season that he had gotten the fauour of his subiectys, and then assemblyd his knyghtys, and gaue batell to him, wher Barnulphus had .vi. or .vii. men agaynst one of his; but by reasō that Egbertus men were lene, lyght, and long brethyd, and Barnulphus men were groce and corpulent, Egbert had the victory, as is before sayd, and seasid the domynion of Mercia in to his own hand: This Egbert also made war vppō Kētysh Saxōs, and at lēght obteynid the vycctory. He also subduyd the Northūbers, and made Osbright and Ella ther kyngys, and to be to him tributaryes, and so ioynid these .iii. prouyncis to his own kyngdom. Also, after the deth of Cuthredus, kyng of Essex, the Essaxons lyffyd with out kyng long tyme, tyll at the last they submyttyd them self to be subiectes to Egbert, kyng of Weste Saxons. This Egbert also wan the towne of Chester from the Brytteyns, whych they before long tyme had kepte. And after this victory, thus obteynyd, he shortly callyd a councell of his lordis, and by theyre aduyce was crownyd king of all Englōd, and then send forth hys cōmyssyoners and cūmaūdement, chargyng straytly that, from that day, the Saxons shuld be all callyd Englysl-men, and all the hole shuld be callyd Englonde.

¶ But yet, not withstondyng that this Egberte had thus obtaynyd the domynyon of the hole lād, yet, after that, dyuers toke vppon them to be kyngis in dyuers of the .vii. kyngdomis, as beforesayd, and there rulyd for a scson; but yet they neuer long contened theryn, but were subduid agayn shortly, except that they were trybutaries to the kyngis of West Saxons. In the .xix. yere of this Egbert, the Danis enteryd in to this land the second tyme, and spoylyd the Ile of Shepey; wherfore Egberte and his knyghtis met with thē, and gaue them battell; but Egbert, with his peple, were compellyd to forsake the feld. And after, the Danis cōfederyd with the West Brytteyns, and dyd mych hurt to Egbertes land. Albeit Egbert kept nobly his domynyon as kyng of all the land; but yet he coud not so expulse the Danis but that they euer were abydyng in one place or other of the land, duryng ŷ lyf of Egbert, whych reynyd .xxxvii. yere, and then dyed.

¶ **Ethelwolphus**, sō to Egbert, begā his reyn ouer the West Saxōs the yere of Cryst .viii.C.xxxii. Some sey ŷ this Ethelwold foūdyd furst ŷ vnyuersyte of Oxōford. He had .iiii. sonnys by his wyfe Osburga, a woman of low byrth; the furst was callyd Ethelwold, the .ii. Ethelbert, the .iii. Etheldred, and the .iiii. Alured; and all these were kyngis of Englonde after hym. About thys tyme, Bertulphus, kyng of Mercya, slew holy Seynt Wolstō; and sone after Bertulphus dyed, and Burdredus was kyng of Mercia after him, which after maryed the doughter of Ethelwolphus. In this tyme the Danis dyd gret hurt in Englonde, and cam to London, and ther robbyd and spoylyd; but ŷ kyng drofe them out of ŷ land, and cōpellyd thē to take the see. And after ŷ Ethelwolphus had thus reynyd .xxii. yere, he dyed, and is buried at Wynchester.

¶ **Ethelwaldus**, the eldest son of Ethelwolph, was next kyng of West Saxons and of the most part of Englōd. He was vicious of lyuing, and was slayn of the Danys. In this tyme, Seynt Edmond was kyng of Estangles.

Ethelbertus, the .ii. son of Ethelwolphus, began his reyn ouer the most part of Englonde the yere of Cryst .viii.C.lvi. In this tyme, the Danis, with a more strenght, enteryd the west part of this land, and cam to Winchester, and toke the cite; but the kyng cōpellyd them to forsake theyr cite, and fought wyth them as they went to theyr shyppis, and many of them were slayn and takyn.

Etheldredus, the .iii. son of Ethelwolphus, began to reyne ouer the West Saxons, and moste parte of Englonde, the yere of Cryst .viii.C.lxiii. In the begīning of his reyn, the Danys landyd in Estangles, but they were compellyd to forsake the contrey, and from thens sayld to Northumberland, wher Osricus, or Osbright and Ella, kyngis, gaue them bateyll; but the Danys, with the help of them of the countrey, which were gladder to lyue vnder the Danys then vnder the kyngis of Weste Saxons, had the vycory, and wan the cyte of Yorke; and after, slew both those kyngis of Northumberland, and wan the hole countrey, and kept it vnto the tyme of kynge Ethelstone. Also, after this, the seyde Danys cam in to Marcy, or Myddyll Englonde, and wan part therof, with the towne of Notyngam; wherefore the kyng, with helpe of Burdredus, than kyng of Mercya, leyde sege to the towne; whereupon the Danys, by apoyntemente, departed and retornyed agayne to York. Also, after that, those Danys, with a nother newe company, that cam from Denmarke, that met them in the see, of which theyr pryncis or leders wer callyd Hunger and Hubba, sayld to Estangles, and ther landyd, and slew the good kyng ther, callyd Edmond, for whom God shewd after many myracles, and lyeth now at Seynt Edmundsbury. He was first shot with arrowys, and after behedyd, because he wold not, at the request of those Danys, deny the crysten feyth. After this, the seyde Danys, with theyr shippis, landid in Suthsex, and cam in to Suthrey and to Redyng; with whom the kynge had oftymys warre, and sped dyuersly. After that, a nother prynce of Danis, callyd Osryk, or Oseg, callyd kyng of Denmark, enterid the land with mo Danys; but that Osryk

was anone slayne. But after that, the Danys made a newe battell besyde Marton, agaynste the kyng, and had the vycory, where the kyng was woundyd; and so, what for pensifnes and for malady of his woūd, he dyed.

¶ **Aluredus**, or **Alfred**, the .iiii. son of Ethelwolphus, was next kyng of West Saxons, and of y most parte of Englonde: the yere of Cryst .viii.C.lxxii. He was .xii. yere old or y he went to skole; but than he profitid meruelously, and was very conyng and subtyll of wyt. He brought vp hys chyldren in lernyng, and causyd his doughters to lerne the sciens of gramer, with many other goodly vertwis. He causid his lordis and people to be obediēt to hym, more by iustyce and fayre behestys thā by war or cruelte. He warryd oft agaynst the Danys; but at the last, by agrement, he voydyd them the west contry; wherfore they drewe toward London, and there spoyld and robbyd. And afterwarde, they went to Mercia, and there slewe the kyng, Burdredus, and put in hys place one Chelwolphus, theyr seruāt. But after this, the kyng kept the Danis so short, that he constraynyd them to gyue hym pledgys for the pease, and also to agre to avoyde the land as sone as they myght haue shippyng. And after that appoyntment, and after the deth of Chelwolphus, he cam to Mercia, and seysyd that domynyon, and ioynyd it to his own, West Saxōs. But yet the Danys continuyd and incresyd more, by reason of the cōminge of a nother prynce of Danis, callyd Gutteron, or Gowrmond, callyd kyng of Denmark; wherfore kyng Alured was feyne to fle to the wodis, in Sommyrset shyre; but after, as it is sayd, by the ayde and myrracle of Sent Cutberd, he droue the Danys out of that cūtre, and forsed them to sewe for pese, which was thus concludyd, that this Gouteron shulde be crystenyd, and certeyne of his dukys; which so performyd, he grauntyd to them Estangles to dwell in, and the contre of Northumberland. And they that wold not be crystenyd departyd to Fraūce, which after y cā frō Fraūce ī to Ēglōd, and were drifyn bak agayn. Also, about the .xxi. yere of kīg

Alurede, the Danis landyd ī .iiii. partes of Æglōd; but Alurede euer reseedid thē, and so māly pursewd thē frō place to place, ŷ at ŷ last he drof thē to North Walis. This noble kīg Alurede deuydyd ŷ nyght and day ī .iii. partes, wherof he spēt .viii. houris in prayer and charytable workis, and other .viii. houris with his coūcellours, or ī study of scyēs, and other .viii. houris ī his naturall rest and sustināce; which order he kept duly, by tapers of wax brenīg, tryēg ŷ certeynte of ŷ tyme, except he were let by seknes, or other gret īpedimētes.

Edward, sō of Alurede, began his reyn ouer the West Saxons, and the more parte of Englund, ŷ yere of Cryst .ix.C. In the .v. yere of his reyne, one Clyto Ethelwold, kynisman to the kyng, rebellyd, and excityd ŷ Danis to rise agayns hym; but the kyng compelled hym and the Danis to fle to Fraūce, which cā afterward agayn, and gaff batteyl to the kyng; but Clyto, and many of ŷ Danis, were slayne, and ŷ rēnāt cōstrenid to seche pease, which was to thē grauntyd, payeng certeyn money; but they anon after brake that couenantis, and semblyd an other host, and gaff batell to the kyng, where .ii. of theyre kyngis, .ii. yerlis, and many a .M. of the Danis that occupied the contrey of Northumberland were slayne. Sone after, Etheldredus, duke of Marcia, dyed; after whose deth the kyng commytyd the rule of that contrey to the dukis wyf, Elflēda, which was syster to the kyng. About the .xiii. yere of kyng Edwardis reyn, a nauye of Danis, which ī Aluredis tyme were dryuyn in to Fraūce, landyd a gayne, and spoyled in dyuers placis; wherfore ŷ kīg hym self preparyd toward them by land, and send a nother nauye to encounter them vppon the see; for fere wherforē those Danis voydyd ŷ lād, and fled ī to Ireland. Also, after ŷ, the Britōs enteryd the cōtrei of Breknowe; but this Elflēda withstod thē, and droue thē bak, and took the queen of Welchmē prisoner. And the same yere, Elflēda wan the towne of Darby from the Danys, and dyd many other noble dedys. Sone after, that noble prynces Elflēda dyed, and than the kyng seisyd that contrey of Mercia, and ioynyed hit to his own kīg-

dome. This Edward subduid þ̅ kīg of Skotlād and Cūbers, and fortune was euer frēdly to hī ī his warris.

Ethelstane, the son of Edward, began his reyn ouer the most part of Englōd, the yere of Cryste .ix.C.xxv. He maryed hys syster to Sitherus, a Dane, then kyng of Northūberlād. He made Cōstātynce, kyng of Skottys, subiect vnto hym, and after þ̅ restoryd him agayn to his kyngdome. After this, Sitherus died; and therfore Ethelstane seysid Northūberland ī to his own hād; wherfore þ̅ sō of Sitherus married þ̅ doughter of Cōstātynce, kīg of Skottis, whych both cōfetheryd agaynst þ̅ kyng Ethelstane, and ēteryd Northūberlād, by the ryuer of Hūber, with a gret host of Danis, Skottis, and other, whō the kīg incoūteryd, and there, in playn battell, Cōstātynce was slayn, and .v. small vnder kīgis and .xii. dukys, with þ̅ more part of the strāgers. This Ethelstane subduid the West Brittōs at Harford. He had mych war styll with the Danys.

Edmōd, broder to Ethelstane, begā his reyne ouer Englōd þ̅ yere of Cryst .ix.C.xl. In the furst yere of his reyn the Danys of Northūberlād rebellyd, to whose help .ii. princis of Danys, one callyd Anlaff, a nother callyd Reynold, cā frō Irelād, with a gret host of Danys and other strāgers. But kīg Edmōd, with Malcolyn, kyng of Skottis, and his people, bete them bak, and made them to forsake that contrey of Northūberlād; wherfor he gaff Malcolyn the contrey of Cumberland, and seysyd þ̅ resedu in to his own hādis.

Eoredus, the broder of Edmōd, was next kyng of Englōd: the yere of Cryst .ix.C.xlvii. In his tyme the Danys rebellyd a gayn, and took the cyte of York. But the kyng preparyd toward thē, and dystroyed a gret part of þ̅ cōtreys, and ī cōclusiō he subduid thē, but not without losse of mē, and, by appoyntmēt, banyshyd theyr duke, Hircus, and ioynyd þ̅ kingedome of Northumberlande to hys owne domynyons.

Edwyn, the eldest son of Edmond, broder to Ethelstone, was next kyng of Englonde: the yere of Cryst .ix.C.lvi. He banysshyd Seynt Donstone for a season, and toke goodis and jewelis frō relygyus housis, and gaff them to alyantis and strāgers. He was a vycyus man of lyuyng, and also a tyrrant to his subiectis, ŷ, in conclucions, they depriuoyd hym from all kyngly dygnyte and honoure.

Edgar, second son of Edmond and broder to Edwyn, was next kyng of Englonde: the yere of Cryst .ix.C.lx. He kept so good iustyce, and dyd so sharp execucyon, that in his days was lytyl felony or robbery vsed. He cawsyd Ludwallus, prynce or kyng of Walys, to yeld to hym yerely, by way of trybute, .CCC. wolphis; by reasō whereof the wolphis in Englonde and Walys were dystroyed. This Edgar vsyd, euery somer, to skour the see with shyppys, and kept them stel all the yere, euer redy for the same purpose, with all aperrell belongyng to them; by meanis whereof he kept his land frō outward enmyes. Also, in his tyme, as well the Danis as all other peple in Englonde, vsyd mych vse of grete drynkyng; ŷ kyng therfor rode thorough the realme, and dystroyd many alehousis, and wold suffer but one alehouse in a vilage, or towne, except it were a grete borough; and ordenyd certeyn cuppys with pynnys and naylys, and made a law that who so euer drank past that mark at one draught, shuld forfeyt a certeyn payn, whereof the accuser shuld haue the one half, and the ruler of the town the other half. He subdewd the Bryttōs in Walys, and spoylyd theyr cōtreys. This Edgar was vycyous, and louyd feyr womē, and slew Ethelwold, a knyght of his, for the loue he had to his feyr wyff, Elfryda, whom he after maryed. Also this Edgar begat of one Wylfryth, a non, a doughter; but after that, both the mother and the doughter prouyd holy women. But after this, Edgar, by the counsell of Seynt Donston, toke repentaunce therfore, and byldyd and repayryd many housys of relygyon.

Edward, the eldest son of Edgar, was next kyng of Englonde: the yere of Cryst .ix.C.lxxvii. This Edward, rydyng in a forest, lost

his people, and sodēly cam to the castell of Corf, where Elfryda, his moder in law, and last wyfe to kyng Edgar, lay; whom, when she had aspyed, desyryd hym to drynk; and as the kyng drank, a seruaunt of hers, whom she had hyryd, stroke the kyng to the hart with a dager; and so she causid hym to be sleyn, because she wold haue Egelredus, her son, kyng, which was second sō of kyng Edgar. Which kyng, whē he was thus strykyn, wold haue fled toward his company; but he bled so sore, that he fell from his hors, the one foot fast in the styrrop, and so was drawn with the hors, till he cam to a certeyn place where that he was fōūdyn dede, all alone, that the maner of his deth was vnknowyn long after. It is seyde y this Elfrida toke repentaunce therfōre, and byldyd two monestarys of nonnys, Amesbury and Warwell; in which Warwell she after lyuyd a solytary lyfe, and after dyed.

Egelredus, the son of Edgar, and of the seyde Elfrida, was next kyng of Englonde: the yere of Cryste .ix.C.lxxxii. This kyng was vngracyous in the begynnyng, wretchyd in hys mydyll lyfe, and hatefull to his peopull in the end. In his tyme the Danys rose agayn, and dyd great harm in dyuers placys in Englōd, that the kyng was glad to graunt them gret sōmys of money for pease to be had; for the assuraunce of which pease, Anlaff, capteyn of the Danys, became a crysten man.

Sone after, a grete sykenes of the bloody flyx reyned, wherof mych people died; and, for lak of good iustyce, many theuis and bribors were in the land, and grete mysery and myschefe. This Egelredus gafe hym self to lechery and polyng of his subiectis, and disinherited men of theyre possessions, and caused them to redeme y same agayn, with grete summys of money, for he payed grete tribute to Danys yerely, whych was called Dane gylt, or Danys money; which was īcresed frō .x.M.l'. a yere to .xl.M.l'. yerely. These Danys before were so proud, y they kept the husbōdmē lyke vyleyns; they lay in theyre housys, and ete and drank, and payed nought, and kept theyr wyfes,

doughters, and seruauntes at theyr plesurys, as the kemys and galowglashis do now in Yreland; and the husbondmen callyd them then Lorde Dane, whych word now we vse in obprobrye, callynge hym ŷ we rebuke Lurdayn. This Egelredus married Emma, doughter to Rychard, duke of Normandy; and after ŷ, send streyte and secrete cōmyssions to euery ruler of euery towne in Englonde ŷ, vppon Sent Brycis day, at a certeyn howre, ŷ Danys shulde be sodenly slayne; and so it was performyd, which turned after to more trouble. After that, tithinges cam in to Denmark of the murder of these Danis; anon after, Swanus, kyng of Denmark, with a grete host and nauy, landyd in Cornwall, and there dyd grete hurt; and when he hard that the kyng was cōmyng to him with ŷ power of his land, he toke his shippis, and landyd agayne in Northfolk, wher that duke Vskatell met hym, and bete hym, and slew many of the Danys. Wherfore Swanus, for that yere, retornyd agayne to Denmark, and ther made great prouyssyon, ŷ the next yere after he landyd agayne at Sandwyche, and there spoyld the cuntre; and when he herd tell that any host was cōmyng agayne hym, then he toke his shippis, and landyd agayn in Suthsex, and spoyld that contrey; and, as sone as he hard of any host of Englyshmen comyng to ward hym, then he wold enter and land in a nother cuntrey, and euer brent, robbyd, and slew the people, without pyte, and so weried the Englyshmen that, in conclusiō, ŷ kyng was fayn to take peace with thē, and gaue to kyng Swanus, therfore, .xxx.M.l.; after which pease, thus made, Swanus returned agayn to Denmark.

Thys yeer next folowyng, the kyng Egelredus made one Edricus duke of Mercia, which was subtill of wytt, secret and false to the kyng and to the realme. And sone after, one Turkyllus, a prince of the Danys, landyd in Kent, with mych peopull, and there dyd sych harm that the Kētyshmen were fayn to make pease with gret gyftys; whych than departyd. But this persecucyō of the Danys in one contrey or other in Ēglōd, neuer seasyd; nor the kyng neuer gaue to them any notable battayll; for when he was dysposyd to gyue thē

battayll, this Edricus wold euermore counsell him contrary ; so that the Danys euer spoyld, and robbyd, and waxyd rych, and the Englyshmen euer poore, nedy, and bare. After this, Swanus beyng in Denmark, heryng of thincrese of his people in Englund, brake his couenauntys before made, and, with a great army and nauey, landyd in Northumberland, and claymyd to be kyng of the hole lād, and causyd all the rulers ther to swere to him fealte ; and so, with a gret host, cam into Mercia, kylling and sleying the pepull. And because the king, Egelredus, was at London, Swanus passyd the ryuer of Temmys, and cam into Kent, and ther besegyð Cāterbury, and wan it, and took the goodys of the people, and fyryd the cite, and slew the monkys ; but euer kept the .x. monk alyue to do vylleyne seruyce, and slew .ix. of them ; and there tooke Elphegus, archbyshop, and after stobyd hym to deth at Greenwyche ; so that they slew there, of relygyous men, aboue .ix.C. persons, and of men, women, and chyldrē, aboue .viii.M. Then kyng Egelredus, feryng this persecucion, sent his wyfe, Emma, and his .ii. sonnys, Alphryd and Edward, in to Normandy. Sone after this, the Danys chasid the kyng Egelredus in to the Ile of Wyght, and after that cam in to London, where the Londoners sent pledgis to Swanus, and great gyftys. And after that, kyng Egelredus fled, and, without cattell or cōfort, sayld in to Normandy, to his wyf. And when Swanus herd of his depertyng, he areryd gret sōmis of money of the people, and a grete parte of Seynt Edmōdis landis, which the people there, claymyng to be fre of kyngis trybute, denyed to pay ; wherefor Swanus, dyspysyng ŷ holy marter, enteryd ŷ teritory of Seynt Edmond, and spoyld ŷ countrey, so that men of that countrey fell to preyr ; so that, shortly after, this Swanus dyed sodenly, yellyng and crieng among his knyghtis. Some sey that he was stykkyd with the swerd of Sent Edmond, wherof he dyed the .iii. day. In fere wherof, Canutus, his son, which rulyd as kyng after his fader, graūtyd to them all theyr lybertes. After this, when Egelredus herd of the deth of Swanus, he made prouysyon, and came in to Englund ; of whose cōmyng so, Kanutus, beyng vnpro-uydyd, sayld in to Dēmark, and retornyd agayne the next yere,

with a grete nauy, and landyd in þ̃ south countrey ; wherfore þ̃ eldest son of kyng Egelredus, callyd Edmond Yronsyd, made prouysyon, with the eyde of Edrycus, to mete hym. But Edrycus cam not, but dysseyuyd hym ; for, as it was after prouyd, Edrycus had promysyd his fauor to Kanutus ; by reason wherof, Kanutus enteryd þ̃ cōtreȳ of West Saxons, and forsyd þ̃ people there to swere to hym fealte, and to gyf to hym pleggis. In this tyme, Egelredus, beyng at London, was takyn with a grete sekeneſe, and there dyed, and was buryed in the north syde of Poulys church, behynd the quere, after that he had reynynd and vnwyſely gouernyd the realme .xxxvi. yeris, leuyng after hym his ſeyd eldest son Edmond Yronsyde, and Alfryde and Edward, whych were in Normandy, and thyder before ſent, as is before rehersyd.

¶ **Edmond Ironsyd**, eldiſt ſon to Egelredus, by his firſt wyf, Ethelgina, and Kanutus, ſon to Swanus, began to rule the Englyſſmen the yere of Cryſt .M.xvi. for ſome lordis toke part with Edmond and ſome with Kanutus ; but Edmond, beyng at London, was crownyd kyng. Sone after, theſe .ii. pryncis met in Dorſetſhyre, where betwene them was a grete battell, but Kanutus was compellyd to fle the fyld ; and, after that, they fought a nother battell, in Worſetor ſhyre, ſo ſore that non coulde tell who had the better, but other for werines, and for lak of day, they depardyde from other, and on the next morow fought agayn ; but thē Kanutus was cōpellyd to forſake þ̃ fyld. After this, they met in Marcia, and ther fought a gayn, wher Edmond, as ſome ſay, by þ̃ treaſō of Edrycus, whom he before had reſeyuyd to his grace, had the worſe. Thus oft tymys theſe .ii. pryncis fought to geder ; but, vppon a ſeaſon when the hoſtys were nygh ioynyng, and at a certeyn tyme of a trewe, a knyght, of the parte of Edmond, ſtood vppon an hygh place, and ſeyd theſe wordis : ‘ Dayly we dye, and none hath the victory ; and when the knyghtis be ded on eyther part, than the dukys, compellyd by nede, ſhall accord, or elles they muſt fyght alone ; and this kyngdome ys now as ſufficyent for .ii. men that ſome tyme ſufficyd for .vii. And yf the

couetouse of lordshyp of these twayn be so grete that nother can be content to take a part, and lyf by the other, nor ſ̄ one vnder the other, then let them fyght alone that wyll be lordys alone; yf all men fyght, stell at ſ̄ last all men shall be slayn, and non laft to be vnder theyr lord ship, nor abel to defend the kyng that shalbe agayne strange enemys and nacions.' These wordis were so well alowyd by both the hostis and the pryncis, both were cōtēt to try the quārell between them two only; and a place and tyme was appoyntyed, where they both met in syght of both hostis; and whē eytheyr had assayd other wyth sharpe swyrdis and strokis, as some wryt, by the furst mocyon of Kanutus, hastily they were both agreyd, and kyssyd ych other, to the comfort of both hostis; and shorly after, they agreyd vppon pertycyon of the lande, and after, duryng theyr lyfis, they louyd as brethren. Sone after, a son of Edrycus, as it was seyde, by the mynd of his fader, espyed when kyng Edmond was at the draught, and strak hym with a spere in to the fondement, where of the seyde Edmōd shortly after dyed, after ſ̄ he had reynyde two yeris, and laft .ii. sonis, Edmōd and Edward.

¶ **Kanutus**, after the deth of Edmond Yronsyde, was sole kyng of the hole realme of Englonde; and after, by the aduise of his cōcell, he sent the forseide sonis of Edmond Yronsyde to his broder Swanus, thē kyng of Denmark, to be slayn, which, abborryng that dede, sēt thē to Salomon, thē kyng of Hungary; where Edmond dyed, and Edward was maryed to Agatha, doughter of the .iiii. Henry, emperour of Almayn. Sone after, Swanus, kyng of Denmark, broder to Kanutus, dyed; wherefore that land fell to Kanutus, which anō after seylyd thydre, and toke therof possessyō, and set it in an order; and after returnyd in to Englonde, and maryed Emma, late wyf before to Egelredus, and by her had a son callyd Hardykynyte, or Knowgh. Also this Kanutus callyd a parliament, where it was agreyd that both Englysshmē and Danis shuld hold ſ̄ laws made by kyng Edgare, because they were thought so good and resonable, a boue any other laws.

Also, in the tyme of this Kanutus, the Skottys rebellyd ; wherfore Kanutus, with a great army, enteryd in to Skotland, and subdued Malcolyn, kyng of Skottys ; by reason wherof this Kanutus was than kyng of .iiii. kyngdomys, that is to say, of Englund, Skotland, Denmark, and Norway. After that, he went in to Denmark, and from thens to Rome, on pylgrymage, and after returnyd in to Englund, where he kepte all his lyfe good iustyce, and was well belouyd, and dyd many good charytable dedis, and byldyd and repayryd many monestaris, and specyally such as were thrown downe in the tyme of his faders persecucion, and after dyed, and lyeth at Winchester, leuyng after hym .ii. sonnys, one callyd Harold, and the other Hardykynyttus, which Hardykynyttus was made kyng of Denmark in his faders days.

Harold, callyd Harefote, for his delyuernes and swyftnes, sōne to Kanutus, by Elgyna, hys furst wyfe, began his reyn ouer Englōd the yeer of Cryst .M.xxxix. Of hym is lytyll laft in memory, for he reynid but .iiii. yeer, saue that he banyshyd his stepmoder, Emma, and tooke her goodis and jewellys from her.

Hardykynyttus, beyng kyng of Dēmark, and second son to Kanutus, by his last wyfe, Emma, was next kyng of Eglōd : the yeer of Cryste .M.xli. In hys tyme, the .ii. sōnys of Egelredus, Alfridus and Edwardus, cam from Normādy in to Englund to vyset theyr moder, Emma, and brought with them a gret cōpany of Normās. Wherfore one yerle Goodwyn, which was most in the kyngis fauour, and of most myght next to the kyng, councellyd the kyng and the lordys not to suffer those Normans to be within the realme, for jeopardy ; by which meanys he gatt auctoryte to order the matter hym self ; wherfor he met wyth thē on Gyl Downe, and there slew Alfrydus, and the most part of the Normās. But Edward was conueyd to his moder, whych, for fere of Goodwyn, sent hym agayn in to Normandy. Sone after this, Hardykynyttus beyng mery at Lambyth, sodenly waxyd dome, and fell down to the groūd, and, wythin .viii.

days after, dyed wyth owt issue of his body, after he had reynynd .iii. yerys, which was the last that reynynd in Englonde of the blood of the Danys.

Edward, the son of Egelredus and Emma, began his reyn ouer Englōd the yere of Cryste .M.xliii. He maryed Goduha, doughter to erle Godwyn, but he neuer fleshly dalt with her, nor put her from his bed. He dischargyd the Englyshmen of ſ grete trybute, callyd Dane gelt, for euer. He banysshyd the yerle Goodwin, and his sonis, for .ii. yeris; after that, was agrement made, and the kyng toke them agayne to grace. In the tyme of which banyshment, Williā, duke of Normandy, cam in to Englonde, and had grete chere of the kyng, and retornynd agayne. In this tyme ſ Skottis rebellyd; wherfore Seward, yerle of Northūberlād, by ſ kyngis commādment and power, enteryd Skotland, and subduyd the Skottis, and chasyd theyr kyng owt of the land. Then kyng Edward gaff that land to Malkolyn, sō of ſ kyng of Combers, to hold of hym and his heyris, kyngis of Englonde, as off theyr cheff lord. After this, ſ yerle Goodwin, sitting at the kyngis bord, was sodenly takyn with sekenis, wherof he dyed with in thre days. Some sey he was takyn with a palsey; and some sey that he was chokyd with a morsell of bred, be cause he sware falsely by that morsell of bred that he was not gylty of the deth of Alfrede, broder to ſ kyng. Sone aft̃ this, kyng Edward sent vnto Henry the .iiii. emperour, for Edward, son of Edmond Yronsyd, to cō in to Englonde, to the intent to make hym his heyre; which accordyng therto cam in to Englōd, and sone after dyed. Also, after the deth of yerle Goodwī, Harold, his eldist sō, waxyd so in the kyngis fauor, that he rulyd the most grete causis of the realme, and was ruler of the kyngis army, and subduyd ſ Welchmen that rebellyd. This Harold saylyd in to Normandy, to see his broder Welnotus, that was sent thether for a plegge for the performance of the couenantis made be twen the kyng and his fader, yerle Goodwyn; where Wil̃m, duke of Normandy, made hym to swere that he shuld mary his doughter, that was thā with in yeris of consent; and then, after the deth of kyng Edward, he shuld kepe

the lād to his behoue, accordyng to the mynd of kyng Edward, after some wryters. After that, this Harold retornyd to Englōd, and shewyd ŷ kyng what he had done; wherwith the kyng was well contentyd. After this, the kyng fell seke; and before he dyed, he saw, in a vysyon, that, bycause the nobles and the prelattis off Englōd were not Goddis seruantis, that God therfore shuld take this kingdome in to the handis of theyr enmis. Sone after ŷ, this kyng Edward dyed with out issue, and was acomptyd a virgyn when he dyed.

¶ **Harold**, the son of yerle Goodwyn, and last kyng of Saxōs, begā his reyn ouer Englonde the yere of Cryst .M.lxvi.; and sone after he had take vppon hym as kyng, one Harold Harefager, son of Kanutus, kyng of Norway and Denmark, cam with .iii.C. shyppis, and enteryd in to the north contrey, and claymyd the land, after the deth of Edward. But the lordis of the coūtrey arose, and gaue them batteyll; but the Danys had the victory; and therfore Harold, kyng of Englōd, preparyd toward them in all hast, and gaue them a strong batteyll, and had the vycory, and slew Harold Harefager wyth hys own handys, where a gret number of Englyshmen were slayn: but many mo of the Danys were slayn, and many takyn prysoners. And after thys vycory, Harold, the kyng of Englonde, waxyd so proud, and for couetouse wold not deuyde the prayes that he took to hys knyghtys, that had well deseruyd it, but kepte it to hymself, that he therby lost the fauour of many of his knyghtys and people.

¶ Sone after this, duke Wyllm of Normandy sēt to Harold, and warnyd him of his couenaūtis brokyn; whych was to haue kept the lād to his vse after the deth of Edward. But because that the dougter of duke Willm, that was promysyd to Harold, was dede, Harold thought hym the more dyschargyd, and seyde that sych a nyse couenaūt owghte not to be holdyn of a nothers land, wythout consent of the lordys of the land, and also because he was therto somewhat cōpellyd. Wherefore duke Willm, with the assent of the lordis of Normandy, gedyrd a great people; and also wyth the assent of the pope Alexander, which cōfyrmid hym in takyng hys viage, and sent

a baner to hym, wylling hym to bere it in hys owne shyp; and so cam ouer wyth a great people, and lādyd at Hastyngis, in Sussex. For .iii. causys duke Wyllm̄ enteryd thys land to subdew Harold: one was, because it was to hym geuyn by kyng Edward the Confessour; the secōd was, to take wrech for the cruell murdur of his neuwe, Alfryde, broder to kyng Edward, and slayn by yerle Goodwyn, whych dede he ascrybyd cheefly to Harold; the .iii. was to reuenge the wrong doon to Robert, archebysshop of Canterbury, which was exylyd by the meanis and labor of Harold, in the tyme of kyng Edward the Confessour. Wherefore duke Wylliam send to kyng Harold, that he shold leue the kyngdome to hym, or ellis to surrēder it to hym and to take it agayn of hym, beryng hym tribute, or ells to trye the quarell hym self with duke Wylliam in hys owne persō. But kīg Harold refusyd al these .iii. offers, and seyde it shuld be tried be dynt of swyrdis; and gederd his people, and ioynyd battell with ŷ Normayns, in a place where now standeth ŷ abbay of Batteyl. In the bygynnyng of whych fyght ŷ Englyshmē kept them in good aray lyke to vēquysh the Normās; wherfore duke Wyllā causyd his mē to giff bak, as though they fled, wherby the Englishmen folowyd and brake theyre aray, and ŷ Normans cā fyersly vppon them, and, in conclusyon, had the vycory, where that kyng Harold was woundyd wyth an arow in the left eye, and therof incontenent dyed, and so was there slayne, after that he had reynyde .ix. mōthis, and was buried at Walthā; whych was ŷ last ŷ reynyde in Englōd of ŷ blood of the Saxons.

¶ Thus endeth the Cronicles of Eglōd, and of dyuers other realmis, vnto the tyme of king Wilm̄, callyd the Cōquerour, whych was duke of Normandy.



Wylliam Conquerour.



Wyllyam Conquerour.



WILLYAM the duke of Normandye, called Conquerour, last son of Robert, the .vi. duke of Normandye, began his raygne ouer the realme of Englande the yere of Chryst .M.lxvii. the .xiii. day of October. And whan he had set ſ̄ realme in some quyetnesse, he be toke the rule therof to his brother, the bysshop of Bayon, and in Lent nexte after sayled into Normandye, and ledde with hym the chefe rulers of Englande, for feare of rebellyon in his absence. The next wynter after, he returned agayne into Englande; and then set a great trybute vpon the Englysshe men, so that therfore some partes of the lande rebellyd, and specially the citey of Excester; but, at ſ̄ last, Wyllyam ouer-came them, and wanne the citey, and punysshed them greuously. But for that and other sterne dedes of Wyllyam, dyuers of the lordes departed to Scotlande; wherfore he kept the other lordes that taryed the strayter, and exalted the Normans, gyuyng to them the chefe possessyons of the lande.

¶ Also, sone after this, kynge Wyllyam caused a solempne coun-seyll of the clargye to be kept at Wynchester, to ſ̄ whiche there came .ii. cardynals from Rome; where, by the meanes of kynge Wyllyam, dyuers bysshoppes, abbottes, and priours, Englysshe men, were put downe, and Normans put in theyr rowmes, to the intent that ſ̄ kynge myght stande in more suertye of the lande.

¶ Also, about the .iii. yere of his rayne, Harrolde and Canutus, ^{Sege at} sonnes to Suanus, kyng of Denmarke, enteryd into the north coun-^{Yorke.} trey, and, with the help of some of the people of the cōtrei, and of some of the cytezyns of Yorke, enteryd the citey, and slewe mo than .iii.M. Normans. But sone after, kyng Wyllyam chasyd them out,

and droue them to theyr shyppes, and toke suche displeasure w̄ the inhabytans of that prouynce, ⁊ he distroyed the lande from Yorke to Durham, that .ix. yere after it lay vnlaboryd and vntylled; and the people there were kept so harde by the warre of the kynge, and in suche famyne, that they ete rattes, cattes, dogges, and other vermyne. Also in the .iiii. yere of Wyllyam his reygne, Malcolyn, kynge of Scottes, entryd into Northūberlande, and distroyed the contrey, and toke many prisoners, and kept them lyke bondemen. But, within .ii. yeres after, kyng Wyllyam made suche warre vpon the Scottes, ⁊ he forcyd Malcolyn, theyr kynge, to swere to hym homage and fealte.

¶ But about this tyme, a great plee and debate was, bytwene one Thomas, archebyssshop of Yorke, and Lamfranke, archebyssshop of Caūterbury, whether the archebyssshop of Yorke shulde be vnder the rule of the archebyssshop of Caunterbury; whiche matter was appelled to Rome, and from thens sende downe to be determyned in Englande; where the archebyssshop of Caūterbury recoueryd and optayned that the archebyssshop of Yorke shulde be sacred of the archebyssshop of Caunterbury, and make to hym othe, with professyon of obedyence.

¶ About the .x. yere of his raygne, Roger, erle of Harforde, and Rafe, erle of Northfolke and Suffolke, and one erle Walreffe, conspired agaynst the kyng; but it was disclosyd; wherfore the erle of Harforde and the erle of Northfolke fledde, and were outlaude, and the erle Walreffe was behedyd. Also, about the .xv. yere of his raygne, Robert Curteyse, the kynges eldyst son, with the helpe of Philyppe, the Frenche kyng, made warre agaynst his father, and gaue hym a great batell in Normandye, where kyng Wyllyam was sore hurte, and fayne to forsake the fylde. The cause of that batell was for that kyng Wyllyam wolde haue resumyd from his sonne Robert the duchye of Normandye, for his wyldnesse, which he before ⁊ tyme had gyuen to him.

¶ This Wylllyam made the Newe Forest in Hampshyre, and therefore cast downe dyuers churches by the space of .xxx. myles. In his tyme he kept the Englysshemen so lowe, that fewe of them bare any offyce of honour, or rule; but somewhat he fauored the cite of London. Also he buylded two abbayes in Englande, that is to say, the abbaye of Battell, where he wanne the fylde agaynst Harolde, and the abbaye of Barmesey, in Southwarke, besyde London. And also he buyldyd .ii. other abbayes in Normandy. ¶ Also, in the .xix. yere of kynge Wylllyam his raygne, the kyng beyng in Normandy, arayed a great trybute in Englande, and caused to be gathered of euery hyde of lande, whiche contayneth .xx. acres, .vi.s.; and soone after that enteryd Fraunce with a great armye, and brent a parte of the cite of Meaux, and many other cities and townes; but, as some wryters say, in that hete, by the lepe of a horse, he toke suche a disease, that it was the cause of his dethe, and made his testament, and gaue to Wylllyam Rufus, his seconde sonne, the kyngdome of Englande, and to Robert Courteyse, his eldyst sonne, the duchye of Normandy; and to Henry, his thyrde sonne, he gaue his treasour; and warned Wylllyam to be to his people louynge and lyberall; and Robert to be to his people sterne and sturdye; and dyed the .ix. day of September, the yere after the incarnacyon of Chryst .M.lxxxvii. after y he had be kyng of Englande .xx. yere, and duke of Normandy .lii. yeres, and was buried in the cite of Cane, in Normandy.



willm's ru
fuz.



Wyllyam Rufus.



WILLYAM Rufus, or Wyllyam the Redde, the seconde son of Wyllyam Conquerour, was crowned nexte kyng of Englande: the .xxvii. day of Septembre, the yere of Chryst .M.lxxxvii. Sone after that Wyllyam Rufus had taken vpon hym the kyngdome, his brother, Robert Courteyse, came out of Normandye, and landed at Hampton, to the intent to haue expulsed his brother from the kyngdome. But Wyllyam Rufus herynge therof, sende to hym embassadours, requyrynge hym that he myght inioye it duryng his lyfe, payeng to hym yerely .iii. thousande markes; with condicyon that whiche of them ouer lyued other to inioye the kyngdome. To the whiche, Robert, by ŷ aduyse of his counsell, assented, and returned agayne to Normandye. This Wyllyam Rufus was somewhat vnstable of maners, and couetous, and solde benefyces of the the churche and bysshoprykes, so that betwene hym and his lordes was oft discencyon; wherfore well nere all the Normans toke parte agaynst hym, so that he was forced, of necessity, to drawe to hym the Englysshemen.

¶ Also, sone after, Robert Courteyse, duke of Normandye, layde his dukedome to plegge to his brother, kyng Wyllyam Rufus, for .x.M.li. and toke his voyage into ŷ holy lande. Also in this tyme, Malcolyn, kyng of Scottis, enteryd Northūberlāde, and there dyd great distruccyon; but yet, after many cōflyctis betwene ŷ kyng and hym, Malcolyn was sworne to be obedient to kyng Willyam.

¶ The .iiii. yere of his rayne, a great wynde was in London, ŷ blewe downe .v.C. howses, and ŷ rofe of Bowe churche, and dyd great hurte in Wynchester, and in dyuers other places. In this tyme also the Welchemen rebellyd; but they were subdued, and theyr duke,

The kyng of
Scottes slayn.

or kyng, called Ryse, was slayne, whiche was accompted the last kyng of Wales. After that, Malcolyn, kyng of Scottes, rebellyd, and came into Englande wth his retenewe; whome one Robert, erle of Northūberlande, inconteryd, and there the kyng Malcolyn was slayne, and, by the ayde of kyng Wyllyam, Edgare, his son, was made kyng of Scotlande. ¶ About this tyme, the order of Cysteaux was fyrst brought into Englande, by one Water Espeke, that founded the fyrst abbey of that religyon at Ryuall.

¶ This kyng Wyllyam was a very couetous man, a proude and a wylfull, and pyllled bothe y^e sperytualte and temperalte, with sellynge of bysshoprykes, abbeyes, and benefyces, and leuyenge vnreasonable taxes and trybutes on the temperalte, specially by the onely counsell of one Ranulphe, hys procuratour; whiche ryches the kyng dyd spende vpon the towre of London, and some say vpon the makynge of Westmyster halle. But yf y^e sayenge be trewe of Westmyster halle, it must be some olde halle there, and nat the newe halle that is nowe; for the armes that appere in the halle y^e nowe is, aswell in y^e stone worke as in the tymber worke, be y^e armes whiche kyng Rycharde the seconde gaue, which be .iii. lyons, with y^e flour de lyce quarterly, and the whyte hart for his badge; for there was neuer kyng of Englande y^e bare the armes of Fraūce, whiche be the flour de lyce, before kyng Edward the Thyrde; for in his tyme the armes of Fraūce was fyrst ioyned to y^e armes of Englande; wherfore it shulde seme euydently that Westmyster halle y^e is nowe, was nat bylde in the tyme of kyng Wyllyam Rufus, except it were onely the foundacyon therof; or els it was y^e halle in Westmyster aboue the steyres, which is nowe called y^e whyte halle. By the reporte of the cōmyn people, in this kynges tyme dyuers great wonders were sene: as y^e deuyll apperyng in mannes lykenesse, great wyndes, tempest, and swellynge and rysynge of waters; and therefore the kyng was tolde by dyuers of his famylyers, y^e God was nat content wth his lyuyng; but he was so wylfull and proude of mynde, y^e he regardyd lyttell theyr sayeng. This kyng Wyllyam, as is sayd and wrytten of hym,

had great pleasure in hūtyng, in so moche ý he pulled downe and distroyed dyuers houses of religyon, to inlarge the newe forest of Wyndesore, for wylde dere; but a knyght of his, named Water Tyrell, by ý glaunsyng of his arowe vpon a braunche, whan he shot at an harte in the sayd forest, smote the kyng, and woūded hym to dethe, wherof shortely dyed, the fyrst day of August, the yere of Chryst .M.C. without any yssue of his body; and he rayned .xii. yere, .xi. monethes, and .xii. dayes, and is buryed at Westmyster.



Henricus I.



Henry.



HENRY Beuclerke, the fyrst of that name, and the thyrde son of Wyllyam Conquerour, was crowned kynge of Englande the .v. day of August, the yere of Chryst .M.C. This Henry was called Beuclerke because he was so well lerned in the .vii. lyberall scyence. He restored the holy church to theyr lybertes, and vsed the lawes of Saynt Edward, with the amendement of them. He put out of his court, all nyce and wanton people. This Henry reformed the olde vntrewe mesures, and made a mesure of a yarde of the lengthe of his arme, and reformed dyuers thynges that were mys vsed before his tyme, and abhorred excesse of mete and drynke, and vsed to venquyssh more with counsell than with swyrde. Sone after that he was kynge he maryed Maude, the doughter of Malcolyn, kynge of Scotlande, and Margaret, his wyfe, doughter of Edward, the outlawe; of whome he receyued .ii. sonnes, Wyllyam and Rycharde, and .ii. doughters, Maude and Mary; whiche Maude afterwarde was maryed to Henry the .iiii. emperour of Almayne.

In the seconde yere of his reygne, Robert Courteyse, his brother, duke of Normandye, whiche had bene longe tyme occupied in warre agaynst Chrystes enemyes, hauynge worde of the dethe of his brother Wyllyam Rufus, and that his brother Henry had takyn vpon hym to be kynge of Englande, made preparacyon in Normandye, and came ouer into Englande with a great hoost, to challenge the crowne. But, by mediacyon of the lordes, it was agreed that Robert shulde haue, euery yere duryng his lyfe, .iii.M. markes, as was promysed hym before by kynge Wyllyam, his brother, and who so euer lyued longest to be others heyre. And sone after that, this Robert departed agayne into Normandye. This Robert, by his manhode, dyd many

notable actes, and specially at the wynnynge of the citey of Acon, vpon the myscreantes and Turkes, and was chosyn kyng of Jerusalem, whiche he refused to take vpon hym. In this tyme began great warre in Normandy, betwene kyng Henry and kyng Philyp of Fraūce; but kyng Philyp sone after dyed.

Battel in
Normādye.

Duke Ro-
bert take
prisoner.

¶ About the .iiii. yere of this kyng, Robert Curteyse came into Englāde agayne, to his brother Henry, whiche made hym great chere, that, before that Robert departed, he released to his brother the forenamed trybute of .iii.M. markes, and departed agayne into Normandy. After this, a great varyaunce fell betwene this Robert and his lordes in Normandy, that they sent vnto kyng Henry, his brother, wyllynge for to come into Normādye, and they wolde delyuer hym the contrey. And also, by the intyssement of yll tale tellers, a great varyaunce fell betwene kyng Henry and his brother Robert, that the kyng, with a great armye, sayled into Normandy, and, with the helpe of the lordes there, chased his brother Robert from place to place, and wanne from hym Roan, Cane, Faloyes, and all the good townes, and many castels. But, at the last, this Robert gaue battell to kyng Henry, in the whiche battell this Robert was takyn, and sent ouer into Englande, and kept in prison, in the castell of Cardyffe, in Walys, by the space of .xxviii. yere, where he after dyed without yssue of his body, and was buryed at Gloucester. And when this Robert was takyn, the kyng Henry seasyd all Normandy into his owne handes.

¶ Whan this kyng Henry came into Englāde, about y .vii. yere of his reyne, he maryed Maude, his doughter, to Henry themperour of Almayne; whiche Henry the emperour prisoned pope Pascall, and dyuers of his cardynals; but after, he resygned his dignyte to pope Calystus, and lyued after a straye lyfe. Sone after this, the erle of Shroysbury and the erle of Cornewall, rebellyd and rose agaynst the kyng, with helpe of the Welchemen. But the kyng gate the fauour of the Welchemen, and caused those lordes, for feare, to flee

into Normandy; wherfore the kynge sayled thyder, and made sharpe warre vpon them, and toke them bothe prisoners, and than returned into Englande. About this tyme, the contrey of Flaunders was sore surroundyd and hurt with the see, that the Flemynge requyred the kynge to inhabyte in the Eest partes of the ryuer of Twede, whiche was to them graunted. But after a certayne of yeres, they were remouyd into West Wales, whiche after spredde all Englande ouer.

¶ In the .xiii. yere of this kynge, there were sene dyuers straunge thynges in the fyrmament, as blasyng sterres, and .ii. mones, one in the eest, another in the west, and a great ertle quake at Notyng-ham, duryng from morne to euenynge, and the ryuer of Trent drye in the somer, that men ouer a fote drye. Sone after, there folowed a harde wynter, moreyn of cattell, scarcyte of vyttell, and great dethe of people.

¶ About the .xv. yere of this kynge, great warre began betwene Lewys, kynge of Fraunce, and kynge Henry; and Lewys, with a great hoost, enteryd into Normandy, and wanne many townes and castels, and droue kyng Henry from place to place. But after that, fortune turned, & many noble captaynes of the Frenche kynges dyed, and some were slayne at the seges, and some forsoke the Frenche kynge. But, at the last, these .ii. prynces mette; with .ii. great hoostes, in a playne fylde, where there was fought a cruell battell; but the Frenche kynge lost the fylde, and many of his people were slayne, and he hym selfe fayne to flee. But after, these princes were agreed, and Wyllyam, the eldyst son of kynge Henry, dyd homage to the kynge of Fraunce for Normandy, and the fre men of Normandy dyd homage to Wyllyam, the kynges sonne.

¶ After this done, kynge Henry sayled into Englāde, but the shyppe wherin Wyllyam, his eldyst son was, and Rycharde, his brother, the erle of Chester, and his suster, the kynges doughter, the countes of Percy, and the kynges nyce, and many other great es-

Battell with
the kynge of
Fraunce.

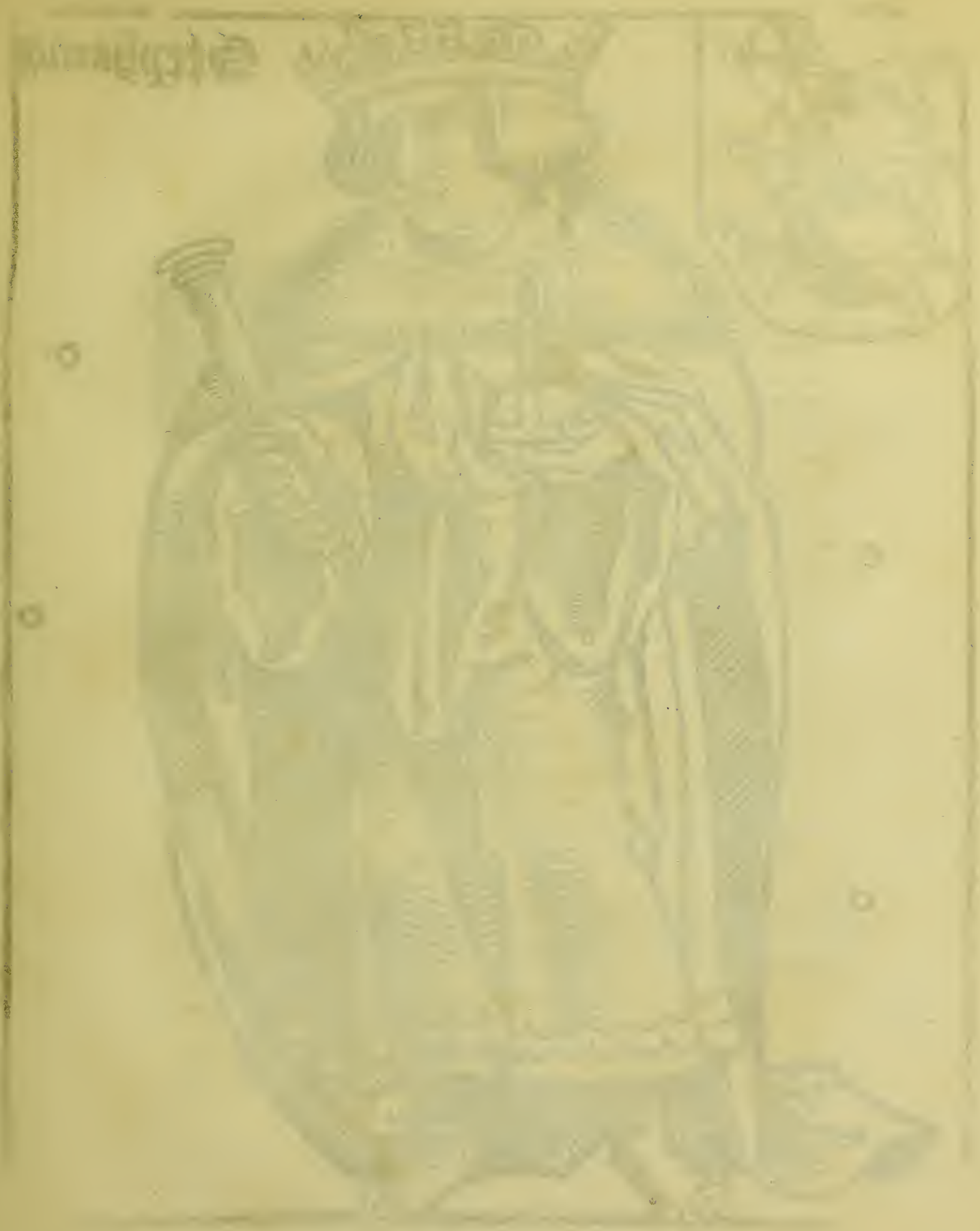
The kynges
two sonnes
drowned.

tates, and other, to the nombre of .C.lx. parsons, strycke vpon a rocke, and was sodaynly brokyn, where they were all drowned, saue one man, that escaped.

¶ About the .xxi. yere, there was a great coūsell called in Lōdon, for ſ̄ correccyon of the vicyous lyuyng of preestes, to be done by the kynges offycers. Sone after this, Henry the emperour dyed, and Maude, the empresse, came to her father, kynge Henry, whiche caused Dauyd, the kynge of Scotlande, and the more parte of the lordes of Englande, to do othe and fealte to the empresse, and to kepe the lande to her, if the kynge dyed without issue male.

¶ Also about the .xxviii. yere, one Geffrey Plantagenet, erle of Angeo, maryed the sayd Maude, and after, by her had issue Henry, whiche Henry, after kynge Steuyn, was kynge of Englande, as shalbe shewed after.

¶ This kynge Henry the Fyrst buylded the abbey of Redynge, and released to the Englysshemen the Dane gelt. Also this kynge Henry, beyng in Normandye, in the .xxxv. yere of his reyne, the seconde day of December, in the yere of Chryst .M.C.xxxv. dyed. Some say he dyed of a surfet; and some wryters say, that it was by a fall of a horse. And his body was brought into Englande, and is buried in the abbay of Redynge.



Stephanus



Steuyn.



STEUYN, erle of Boleyn, and syster son to kynge Henry, than toke vpon hym to be kyng of Englande; for when he harde of kyng Henryes dethe, he passed the see, and came into Englande, thorowe counsell of many of the great lordes of Englande, contrary to their othe made to Maude, y^e empresse, and was crowned kynge vpon Saynt Steuyns day, the yere of Chryst .M.C.xxxv. after the count of Englande, by Wyllyam, archebyssshop of Caunterbury, whiche fyrst made othe to Maude, the empresse. This Steuyn, the fyrst yere of his raygne, araysed a great hooste, to haue made warre agaynste kynge Daued, of Scotlande, but he came and made a peace with hym. But he dyd hym none homage, because he had done homage before to Maude, the empresse. Nat withstandynge, yet Henry, the eldyst son to kynge Daued, dyd homage to kyng Steuyn. But after that, this Daued repented hym of that, and entryd into Northumberlande with a great hoost, and brent and slewe the people in most cruell wyse, and slewe man, woman, and chylde. But the kynge sent one Thurstone with a great hoost agaynst them; betwene whiche there was a great battell, where the Scottes lost the fylde, and many of them slayne, and the resydewe fled into Scotlande. And after that, this kynge Steuyn hym selfe made a great voyage into Scotlande; but he dyd there but lyttel to his pleasure or profyte.

■ This kynge Steuyn beseged dyuers castels, of dyuers bysshoppes and other lordes, and toke them by force, and fortifyed them with his knyghtes and seruauntes, to the entent to withstande the empresse, whose commynge he euer feared.

■ About the .vi. yere of his raygne, Maude, the empresse, came into Englande, by the comfort of the erle of Glocester, bastarde son

Battell.

The kyng
taken pri-
soner.


kyng Henry, her father, and of the erle of Chester; but the kyng raysed so great a power, y^e the emperesse was fayne to go and take the citye of Lyncolne for her refuge and helpe; and the kyng her beseged longe tyme; but, at the last, she and her company escaped, and than the kyng toke the citye. And than the erle of Chester, with a great power of Welchemen, and the erle of Gloucester, brought a great power to the emperesse, and came agaynst the kyng; betwene whome there was fought a cruell batell, that dured a longe season; it was hard to knowe who shulde haue the better. But at the last, the kynges people gaue backe, and fledde; and the kyng abode with a few of his knyghtes, and was takyn prisoner, and brought to the emperesse; and after sent to Brystowe to prison.

¶ After this fylde so wonne, the emperesse thought her sure of the hole realme; but she was disceyued, for the Kentysshemen toke parte with the kyng. The quene also, kyng Steuyns wyfe, made great labour to haue the kyng delyuered, promysynge that he shulde surrendre the lande to the emperesse, and he to go to religyon; but the emperesse and her coūsayle wolde nat graūt therto.

Battell at
Wynches-
ter.

¶ Also they of the citye of London made great labour to the emperesse, to vse Saynt Edwardes lawes, and nat the lawes that the emperesse father had ordayned, whiche was more straye and straunge to them than the other; but the emperesse and her counsayle woulde nat graunt it. For these sayd causes, the citezynes of Lōdon were discontented, and wolde haue takyn the emperesse; but she hauynge knowlege therof, departed and fledde to Oxforde; and the quene, with ayde of the Kentysshemen, her fryndes, raysed a great hoost, y^e the emperesse, for feare fled to Gloucester; and in this whyle, the erle Robert of Gloucester arayed a great people; and in a playne fylde, besyde Wynchester, the erle was discomfet by them of the quenes parte, and there therle was takyn prisoner. Then, by medacion of fryndes, they agreed vpon eschaunge of prisoners; so that the kyng was delyuered for the erle Robert. And sone after that, the kyng

waxed more stronge of people, and besegyd the empresse at Oxforde, that the empresse was fayne to clothe her and her people in whytte apparell, and in a nyght, whan the grounde was couered with snowe, she by that meanes escaped, and fledde to Walyngforde; and sone after that, with a small companye, departed into Normandye, to her husbande Geffrey Plantagenet. But yet, after this, Robert, erle of Gloucester, and the erle of Chester, were so stronge of people, that the kynge was nat abyll to venquysshe them, and dyuers and many conflyctes was bytwene them; and yet, at a batell at Wylton ^{Batell at Wylton.} bytwene them, the kynge lost the fylde, and was lyke to haue ben takyn, but yet he escaped. In this pastyme dyed Greffrey Plantagenet, and Henry, his eldyst sonne, was made duke of Angeo and Normandye.

 It was not long after but that Eustase, sonne to kynge Steuyn, with helpe of the Frenche kynge, made warre vpon this duke Henry, ^{Duke Henry landed.} in Normandye, but he preuayled nat. Sone after this, duke Henry came from Normandye, and, with a great armye, entred into Englande, and wanne the castell of Maluysburye, and dyd moche harme to the kynge; and, at the last, came into London, and wanne the Towre, more by polecye and fayre promyse than by strength; and after wanne Walyngforde, and many other stronge holdes, that the kynge had so moche warre, that he wyst nat whether to go. But the kynge caused Theobalde, archebyssshop of Caunterburye, to make meanes to the duke for a peace; whiche, at the last, was concluded about the feest of Epyphanye. Some say it was agreed that Steuyn shulde be kynge the terme of his lyfe, and the duke heyr apparant, and to be kyng after his dethe; and some storyes say that the lande was deuyded bytwene them. But howe so cuer peace was concluded, trewth it is, that kynge Steuyn dyed, as men sayde, for thought and care, in the .xxv. day of Octobre nexte folowyng, the yere of Chryst .M.C.liiii. for he was in warre and trouble, and great vexacyon, all the terme of his lyfe; and he is buried at Feuersham.

1555

1555



Henricus.ij.



Henry.



HENRY the Seconde, and son to Geffrey Plantagenet, erle of Angeo, and Maude the empresse, was crowned kyng the .ix. day of December, the yere of Chryst .M.C.liiii. This Henry was fortunate in his begynnyng, and vnfortunate in his ende, for fyrst he put downe all the newe castelles that were longynge to the crowne, whiche kyng Steuyn before tyme had geuyn to dyuers men, and fortifyed them agaynst Maude, the empresse. He put vnder his owne dominyon the kyngdome of Wales, and there let fall downe many great woddis, and made hye wayes. He wanne Irelande by strength. He subdued Wyllyam, kyng of Scotlande, whiche at that tyme hylde a great parte of Northumberlāde vnto Newe Castell vpon Tyne, and ioyned Scotlande to his owne kyngdome, from the southe ocean to the northe yles of Orkeys, and made all these landes as vnder one pryncipate. He had in his rule, Normādy, Gascoyn, Guyon, Angeo, and Chynon, and made subiecte to hym Aluerne; and, by the tytle of his wyfe, Elynor, doughter to the erle of Petowe, he optayned ſ Moūtes Pyranye, in Spayne, that we rede of none of his progenytours that had so many contreys vnder his dominyon. About the .vi. yere of his reyne, he wanne the citye of Tolowys.

Also, for dyuers actes that the kyng procured to be made agayne the lybertes of the church, there fell a great debate betwene hym and Thomas, then archebysshop of Caunterbury, that the bysshope fled vnto Rome. But after, whan Thomas came agayne to Caunterbury, .iiii. of ſ kynges knyghtes, because the kyng beyng in Normādy, they harde ſ kyng say these wordes, If he had any men about hym, he had ben a venged vpon ſ traytour longe or that tyme. Therefore these knyghtes came fro the kyng, beyng in Normandy, Saynt Thomas of Caunterbury slayne.

and slewe this Thomas in the cathederall churche in Caunterbury, at Saynt Bennettes auter: whiche Thomas is now, by the churche, canonysed for a holy Saynt, and dyuers myracles auctorysed by the churche that God hathe shewed for hym. This kynge Henry let crowne Henry, his eldyst sonne, kynge of Englande, and went hymselfe into Normandy; but his son Henry dyed before his father, and therefore he is nat accounted in the nōbre of the kynges of Englande. This Henry, his son, and his .ii. bretherne, Johā and Rycharde, made warre agaynst theyr father. Some say the cause of the warre was because the kynge imprisoned Elynor, his wyfe, whiche was kept in prison tyll the kynge dyed, and he kept the wenche Rosamonde. ¶ Also, about the .xl. yere of his reyne, Wylliam, the kynge of Scottis, by the assent of all the lordes of Scotlāde, dyd homage to kynge Henry, at Yorke, where y kynge Willyam graūted by his letters patentes, that he, and his heyres and successours for euer, shulde do homage vnto the kyngis of Englande.

¶ This kynge Henry, in the later ende of his dayes, was neclygent to do his duetye to God and holy churche, and also neclygent in executyng of his lawes; and was warned oft tymes to amende these thynges, but he forced no suche monicyon, nor regarded no counsell; and therefore in his later dayes all thynges went agaynst hym; for fyrst, about the .xxx. yere of his reyne, he sent his son Johā into Irelande, whiche there dyd preuayle but lyttell; and in the nexte yere the kynge went thyder hym selfe, but fortune was to hym contrary, y he lost his trauayle. And, about the .xxxii. yere of his reyne, he lost Aluerne, agaynst the kynge of Fraunce; and the next yere after, he lost Butyrecan; and the nexte after, he lost Cenomenea, Turyne, with many holdes to them belongynge; and in the next yere after, in the .vi. day of July, the yere Chryst .M.C.lxxxix. he dyed, and is buried at Founteuerarde.

Richardus I.



Rycharde the fyrst.



RYCHARDE the Fyrst, sonne of kyng Henry the Seconde, was crowned kyng of Englande the .iii. day of Septembre, the yere of Chryst .M.C.lxxxix. This kyng ordayned, in the cite of London, two baylyffes to be chosen yerely, to gouerne the cite, whose names were

The fyrst baylyffes Henry Tornehyll,
of London, Rycharde Fitzryuer.

¶ Vpon the whiche day of his coronatyon, because the Jewes presumed further than they ought, the people fell vpon them, and droue them to theyr houses, and robbed and spoyled them without pyte, and brent some of theyr houses, that the kyng sent straye cōmaundement to cesse the ryot; but because the nombre of the trespassours were so many, they escaped vnpunysshed. ¶ In the begynnyng of his reyne, Wyllyam, kyng of Scottes, came to Caunterbury, and dyd homage to kyng Rycharde. This Rycharde toke vpon hym to warre agaynst Chrystes enemyes, and made great preparacyon of money; and therfore he gaue ouer Berwyke and Rokysborowe to the kyng of Scottes, for .x.M.l. and solde to the bysshoppe of Durham his owne prouynce, and made many bysshoppes and ryche preestes to pay great sommes of money. Also he had lycence of the pope to dyspence with them that had takyn vpon them the crosse; wherby he raysed moche money, and than comytted the rule of Englande to his chauncelour, the bysshop of Ely; and than went into Normandy, and mette with Philyppe, kyng of Fraunce, at Turon, whiche had promysed the same voyage. In whiche metynge they deuyseed assurance for the contynuaunce of theyr iourney into y^e holy lande: that is to say, that kyng Rycharde shulde passe by the see, ^{Voyage into the holy lande.}

The kyng
of Cypres
takyn.

The citie of
Acres
wonne.

Varyāce.

and kynge Philyppe by the lande, and to mete agayne at Cycyll; where they mette accordynge to theyr apoyntement; where, sone after, a grudge began betwene the .ii. kynge, for correctyon of theyr soudyours. Wherefore kynge Philyppe departed, but kyng Rycharde entryd the lande of Cypres, and made so sharpe warre that he toke the kynge of Cypres prisoner, and layde hym in bondes of syluer, because he had promysed he shulde nat be put in bondes of yron. After ÿ, he sayled to Acon, or Acres, where kynge Philyppe, with his hoost, lay, and beseged the citey, whiche than ioyously receyued kynge Rycharde; whiche bothe princes set vpon the citey of Acres, and wanne it. But sone after that, a greater grudge began betwene those two prynces. Some say the cause therof was for the partynge of the pryces gotten at the sayd citey of Acres; and some say it was for that that kynge Rycharde denyed to kynge Philyppe halfe that whiche was gotten at ÿ citey of Cypres, whiche kynge Philyppe claymed by comenant, made betwene them at Turon; and some say it was because that the erle of Champeyne departed from kynge Philyppe, and forsoke to do hym pleasure, whiche erle kynge Rycharde receyued. And some say the cause of the varyaunce was for ÿ that kynge Rycharde, beyng in Cycell, maryed the syster of the eyng of Nauerne, where he before had promysed to mary the syster of ÿ sayd kynge Philyppe. But what so euer was the cause of the grudge, trouthe it is that kynge Philyppe departed from Acres, and contynued his iourney tyll he came into Fraunce. Sone after this, it was shewed kynge Rycharde that the towne of Japheth, whiche was than in chrysten mennes handes, was beseged by one Salandyne, and lykely to be wonne; wherefore kynge Rycharde sayled thither by water, and a nother hoost of Frenchemen and other, whiche remayned there after the departynge of kynge Philyppe. He sent them to Japhethe by lande, and there by strength rescued the towne, and wanne dyuers other holdes there nyghe, and lefte many chrysten knyghtes to kepe them, and slewe the Turkes which he had take prisoners; by reason wherof kyng Rycharde was sore dredde and fered of the Turkes. In the whyle ÿ kynge Rycharde was thus occupied

in the holy lande, the bysshop of Ely, ŷ had the gydynge of Englande, dyd moche tyranye and extorcyon in Englande; as in depriuynge of bysshoppes and abbottes, and kepynge theyr landes, and pollynge and oppressynge of lay people by dyuers meanes; that at the last, by strength, the lordes put hym out of the lande. This kynge Rycharde perceyued that the chrysten people decresyd in the holy lande, aswell by infyrmytes as lacke of vytell, toke a truce for .iii. yere, and returned whomewarde, and sent the quene, his wyfe, by the see; and he sayled, with a small company, into Histra, and there landed, where he was takyn prisoner by the duke of Ostreche, and by hym put in prison, and brought to Henry, emperour of Almayne, whiche put hym in stronge prison, and after raunsomed hym at .C.M.l.; whiche duke of Ostryche was afwarde therfore accursed of the pope, for ŷ wronge done to kynge Rycharde.

Kynge Rycharde taken prisoner.

¶ Also, for the payment of this sayd raunsome, afterwarde the woll of all the whyte monkes and chanons in Englande was solde, and rynges, iewels of prelates, and vessels and chalyces of all the churches thorowe the lande, and dyuers and many shrynes scraped and spoyled of theyr golde and syluer. Dyuers causes there were, as wryters reherse, that the emperour shulde owe grudge to kynge Rycharde; one was, because kynge Rycharde had promysed to the emperour an ayde for the wynnyng of the kyngdome of Cicyle, whiche the emperour claymed as his inheritance; whiche promyse kynge Rycharde, as he sayd, brake. Another cause was, for that ŷ kyng Rycharde toke from a knyght of the duke of Ostryche, the dukes banner, and trode it vnder his fete, in dispyte of the duke, and of the emperour, his lorde; and therfore the duke and the emperour were gladde to do kynge Rycharde displeasure.

¶ It is sayd that a lyon was put to kynge Rycharde, beyng in prison, to haue deuoured hym; and when the lyon was gapynge, he put his arme in his mouthe, and pulled the lyon by the harte, so harde that he slewe the lyon; and therfore some say he is called Rycharde

Cure de Lyon. But some say he is called Cure de Lyon because of his boldnesse and hardy stomake. Also Johñ, the kynges brother, by excytynge of the Frenche kyng, herynge that the kyng, his brother, was in prison in Almayne, began to make warre within Englande, and toke dyuers castels of the kynges, as Wyndesore, Notyng-ham, and dyuers other. And the Frenche kyng made warre in Normādye; but the barons of Englande resysted so this Johñ, the kynges brother, that he was fayne to departe to the kyng of Fraunce. After, whan kyng Rycharde came home into Englande, he called a parlyment, and set the realme in order, and exyled all the Jewes out of Englande, saue onely a fewe, whiche remayned in Norwyche; but after that, the Jewes were suffred to inhabyte agayne in dyuers places in Englande. And than after, he sayled into Normandye, where his brother Johñ than was, and made sharpe warre agaynst the Frenche kyng; but after, a truce and peace was taken betwene them for a certayne tyme; and his brother Johñ was then reconsyled to the kyng, whiche bothe to gyther returned into Englāde. But after, when the day of truce was expyred, kyng Rycharde sayled agayne into Normandye, and made newe warre agayne vpon the Frenche kyng; in the whiche warre they sped dyuersly, for the Frenche kyng toke dyuers of his holdes in Normandye, and kyng Rycharde toke dyuers of his holdes in Fraunce; and many great conflyctes was betwene them. But at the last, kyng Rycharde went to besege a castell, called Castyll Gayllarde, and, as he rode about the castell to aduyse it, one marked hym with a quarell, and smote hym in the hede, wherof anone after he dyed, without yssue of his body, the .vi. day of Apryll, the yere of Chryst .M.C.xCix. and is buried at Founteuerarde.

Kyng
Rycharde
slayne.

asunioe

valaracke



Johannes



Joh̄n.



HARDE, brother to the forenamed Richarde, was crowned kynge the .xxvi. day of Julij, the yere of Chryst .M.C.xCix. Philyppe, the kynge of Fraunce, hylde a counsell in Cenomenia, in Maturyn, and made one Artur, sonne to Geffrey Plantagenet, neuewe to kynge Johan, duke of Bretayne, whiche incontynent enteryd the contrey of Angeo, and kynge Philyppe entryd into Normandye, and toke many holdes there. Kynge Johan herynge therof, came into Normandye, to resyste kynge Philyppe; but, by mediacyon of fryndes, a peace was made betwene the two kynges; and after that, kynge Johan was deuorced from his wyfe, which was doughter to the erle of Glocester, for nerenesse of blode, and maryed in Fraunce, to Isabell, doughter to the erle of Engolesym.

¶ About the .iii. yere of kynge Johan his reyne, there were sene in the fymament .v. mones. Also, about the same tyme, at a parlyment holdyn at Verdon, it was concluded ȳ kynge Joh̄n shulde appere at Parys, within .xv. dayes after Ester next folowyng, to answeere to suche questyons as then shulde be layde agaynst hym, for the duchye of Normandye, and the contrey of Angeo. And because he appered nat, nor none for hym, kynge Philyppe enteryd into Normandye, and toke there dyuers holdes, and gaue the countye of Angeo to the forsayd Artur. And whan kynge Joh̄n harde therof, he came from Englande to Normandye, and there made warre, and toke the sayd Artur prisoner, and dyuers other, and returned shortely into Englande; but yet he wanne nat ȳ contrey, as it was sayd. In the same yere folowyng was great stormes of wynde and rayne, and hayle as bygge as hennes egges, and sperytes sene in the eyre lyke foules, berynge fyre in theyr bylles, whiche set dyuers houses a fyre.

This kyng Johā than asked an eyde of the clergie of Englande, for the optaynyng of Normandy, whiche was lost; whiche they denyed to gyue. And also the pryour and couent of Caunterbury had chosyn one Steuyn Langton bysshop, agaynst the kynges wyll, whome the pope conformed. Wherefore kyng Johan was nat content, and droue the pryour and dyuers of the couent out of the realme, and commaunded that no letter nor commaundement of the pope shulde be receyued in Englande, nor wolde nat, at the popes request, receyue that bysshoppe so chosyn. Wherefore suche varyaunce fell betwene the pope and the kyng, that the pope interdyted the lande; whiche stode so interdyted .vii. yeres, tyll that kyng Johan was reconsyled. But as it is sayd, this interdytyng was nat so straye but that chylderne were chrystened in euery place, and deuyne seruyce sayd in many houses of religyon and other places, by lycence purchased than and before, and people houselyd and anayled, except suche persons as were except by name in the bull. About this tyme, in Sussex, was taken a fysshe lyke a man, whiche was kept a lyue .vi. monthes after vpon lande, with rawe flesshe, but, by cause they coude haue no speche of it, they cast it into the see agayne.

Varyance.
Englāde interdyted.

Normādye lost.

¶ About the .vii. yere of kyng Johans reyne, the sayd Frenche kyng Philippe wanne all the hole contrey of Normandy. Some auctours say that the Frenche kyng made all this warre agaynst kyng Johā, by excytyng of the pope for his contumacye agaynst the churche.

Voyage into Irelande.

¶ About this tyme, the Irysshemen rebellyd; and than kyng Johan, with a pusant armye, went into Irelande, and shortely subdued them, and set the contrey in a rule, and there bylde many great townes and castels, and ordayned his lawes there to be kept, and returned agayne into Englande.

¶ Sone after this, kyng Johan prepared a great hoost, and sayled into Rochyll; and when the Frenche kyng harde therof, he prepared

another stronge hoost; so that bothe the hoostes were within lytell dystaunce to haue mette; but, by mediacyon of fryndes, the two kynges there toke a peace for .ii. yeres folowyng. Also, about the .x. yere of kyng Johans reyne, the pope sent .ii. legates, Pandulfe and Durrant, to kyng Johan, that he shulde receyue Steuyn to his archebysshopryke, and sent a newe comyssion, wherby the curse of interdytynge (if the kyng wolde not agree therto) was newly denounced.

¶ Also he assoyled and acquyted all the lordes of Englande, spirituall and temporall, of all homage and fealte that they owed to the kyng, to the intent that they shulde aryse agaynst hym; but the kyng wolde nat be reconsyled. Wherfore the pope sent to the kyng of Fraunce, in remyssion of his synnes, that he shulde take with hym all the power that he myght, and go into Englande to distroy kyng Johan. ¶ Also about this tyme, the citezynes of London made suche sute to the kyng, that they optayned that the kyng graunted them, to chose of them selfe yerely a mayre and .ii. sheryffes, and the names of baylyffes clerely to be voyded; whose names of the meyre and sheryffes were

The fyrst Mayre Henry Fitz Alwyn.

The fyrst Sheryffes . . . { Peter Duke,
Thomas Nele.

¶ Also, in the .x. yere of kyng Johā, London brydge begon to be edefyed of stone, whiche before was of tymbre, and the monastery of Saynt Mary Oueres was begon for to be buylded.

¶ Also, about the .xi. yere of kyng Johans reyne, the kyng was in great feare lest he shulde lose his realme, and to be vtterly vndone hym selfe, wherfore in his mynde he was sore anoyed, and sent to the pope and sayd he wolde be reconsyled; wherfore the pope sent Pandulfe agayne into Englande, with these artycles, that he shulde re-

Kyng Johā
reconsyled
to the pope.

ceyue Steuyn to his archebysshopryke, and restore to hym and to all other all profytes and frutes belongynge to them that he had wrongfully taken; and that he shulde yelde vnto the popes handes the tytle of his crowne, and to holde it of the pope. To the whiche thynges the kynge graunted and resygned his crowne to Pandulfe, and toke it agayne of hym to holde it of the pope, and to pay yerely to the church of Rome .M. markes of syluer; and after that receyued Steuyn, and suffred hym to inioy his archebysshopryke, and restored all suche profytes as he had from hym, and all other wrongfully taken. Some wryters affyrme, that for this foresayd payment, the Peter pens be payde at this day.

Peter pens.

¶ Also, about the .xiiii. yere of his reyne, kynge Johā fell at a great discencyon with his lordes. One cause of that varyance was for that y the kynge wolde nat holde y lawes of Saynt Edward, but wolde holde no lawe, but do all thīge at his owne wyll, and dyd dis inheryte many men without assent of his lordes, or of any other counsell; and also wolde haue dis inheryte the erle of Chester, because he rebuked hym of his wyckednesse, for that that he hylde his owne brothers wyfe, and lay by many other great lordes doughters, and spared no woman that hym lyked. Wherfore his lordes toke the citye of London and hylde them there a certayne whyle. But, by meanes of the archebysshoppe of Caunterbury and other prelates, the kynge and his lordes met besyde Stanys, at a place called Rumney Mede; and there agrement was made, and a charter made thereupon,

Magna Carta first made.

Lewys, son to the Frenche kyng enteryd īto Englad.

called Magna Carta; whiche charter anone after the kynge brake, that newe varyance began betwene hym and his lordes agayne, y dyuers of the lordes sent vnto the kynge of Fraunce, that he shulde sende his son Lewys hyther, and they wolde rendre vnto hym the lande; which Lewys therupon came into Englande, and toke dyuers castels of the kynges by force, and after came to London, where the barons receyued hym, and yelded to hym the Towre of London. Kynge Johā beyng thus ouer set with this Lewys by the eyde of dyuers of his lordes, sent vnto the pope, shewynge theyr rebellynge;

whiche sent vnto hym a legate called Swallo, whiche, in the popes name, commaunded Lewys to returne into Fraunce, and labored to haue a peace betwene them; but his labour was in vayne. Wherefore the kyng for fere fled towarde Lyncolne. But, sone after, at Neuwarke, he dyed of the flyx, the .xix. day of October, the yere of Chryst .M.CC.xvi. But some say that a monke poysoned hym at Swynestede, and he is buried at Worcester.

IN HOC SIGNO



Henricus. III.



Henry the Thyrde.



HENRY, the thyrde of that name, and eldyst sonne to kynge Johñ, was crowned kyng the .xxviii. day of Octobre, the yere of Chryst .M.CC.xvi. whan he was but .ix. yeres of age. And after his coronacyon, this Lewis cōtynued in his war which he had begon; but dyuers of ÿ lordes toke parte agaynst hym. And also Swallo, the legate, accursed this Lewys, and interdyted Wales, and a cursyd Lewellyn, prynce of Wales, and all that hylde parte agayne this yonge kyng, Henry. And the erle of Chester, and dyuers other lordes of the kynges parte, went to Lyncolne, and toke the towne, and slewe many Frenche men beyng there, and forced this Lewys to take a peace, whiche peace was thus concluded: ÿ Lewys shulde go agayne into Fraunce, and to haue a .M. markes for his trauayle, whiche he had, and so departed. Also, in the thyrde yere of this kyng, began ÿ newe worke of the churche of Westmyster.

ABOUT the .viii. yere of this kynges reyne, the charter called Magna Carta was cōfyrmed, and dyuers artycles addyd therto, howe the kyng shulde haue the warde and maryage of the lordes heyres, beyng within age, and the fyrst statute of Mortmayne than made; and about that tyme the plees of the crowne were holden in the Towre of London. And this kyng also graunted many lybertes to the citey of London. Sone after this, kynge Henry, with a great hoost, sayled into Normandye, by the excytyng of a Frenche man, named the erle of Marche: where, betwene the Frēche kyng Lewys and hym, was fought a great battell; but, in the ende, the Frenche-
men had the victory, and toke .xxii. knyghtes and noble men prison-
ers, and .v.C. meane people; ÿ kynge Henry for feare fled, and turned
backe to Burdeux; but after, a peace was made, and kynge Henry
returned into Englande. About this tyme was a great yerthe quake

Lewys re-
turnd īto
Frāce.

Battel in
Fraunce.

The empe-
rour de-
posed.

Libertes of
Lōdon seas-
yd.

in Englande. And also, in the .xxx. yere of this kynge, the kynge seasyd the franchises of London into his handes, for a iugemēt gyuen by one Piers Alyn, the mayre, and aldermen, agaynst a wedowe called Margarete Vyell; which iugemēt, as it was sayd, was after fōude good; wherfore the citezys inioyed agayne theyr lybertes. About the .xxxv. yere of this kynge, the order of the freres Augustynes began in Englande, in a place in Wales called Wodhouse. And about this tyme, the kyng maryed Margarete, his doughter, to Alexāder, the kyng of Scottes, which Alexander dyd homage to ŷ kynge at Yorke. This kynge Henry ofte tymes, for dyuers cōplayntes made agaynst ŷ mayres offycers of London, seasyd the lybertes of the citey into his owne handes, and set other offycers to rule the citey; but euer they were restored agayne. Also about this tyme, Rycharde, the kynges brother, erle of Cornewall, was electe kyng of Almayne and kynge of Romainys, whiche toke shyppynge and went thyder, and there was crowned in ŷ citey of Aquisgranū. About the .xli. yere of kyng Henryes rayne, a greuous byll of complaynt of the cōmynalte of London was put agaynst the mayre and aldermen, and gouernours of the citey, for wronges and extorcyons done by them to the cōmynalte, by settinge of taxes, and alterynge of tolles and customes to theyr owne singuler lucre; whiche byll was cast in the kynges wardrobe; whiche after came to the kynges handes, that the kynge sent downe his justyce, and other of his counsell, whiche discharged the mayre, sheryffes, and chamberlayne, and made inquisicyon of the truthe; but the offenders, by theyr lerned counsell, longe tyme defended them selfe, and delayde the tryall. And yet dyuers places of syttyng were appoynted, as well in the Guylhalle and at the Folkemote at Poules crosse, and in the Eschequer, ŷ kynges grace there beyng present; where, in the ende, the mayre and aldermen were arrested and cōpelled to put in great suertes; and, at the last, they put them in the kynges mercy, and made theyr ende, and, lastly, restored agayne to theyr roumes, but nat without great fynes payenge. Also, about this tyme, there was a great derth, that whete was worth .xxiiii.s. a quarter.

¶ Also about the .xliii. yere of this kynges reyne, the kynge, at a court of Folkemote at Paulys, axed lycence of the cōmons of the citye, accordynge to the sayd ordynaunce, to passe the see; and so went vnto Burdeux and into Fraūce, and had great chere of the Frenche kynge Lewys, and or that he came agayne he graūted all his ryght that he had in Normandye, Gascoyn, and Guyon, to the said Lewys, and toke agayne Guyon, Angeo, and Mayn, to holde of the Frenche kynge, and was called in Fraunce duke of Guyon, and dyd homage to the Frenche kynge therfore. Also, about the .xlv. yere, ȳ barons of Englande, by force of those forsayd ordynances, toke vpon them to chaūge the kynges justyce, and the kynges sheryffe, and dyuers other offycers ȳ the kyng had admytted, and put other in theyr places; wherwith the kynge was nat content, and publysshed his bull of absolucion. Wherfore the barons assembled to gether in the marches of Wales, with a strōge power, and sent a letter to the kynge, praynge hym to obserue the said ordynaūces wherto he was sworne; to whome the kynge sent no answeare. Then the barons came forwarde with banners displayde, and moche people resorted to them; and they put in prison and punysshed all them that toke the cōtrarye parte, and at the last came into London, for the citye toke ȳ barons parte. But sone after, agrement was made betwene the kynge and his lordes, whiche contynued nat longe, for ȳ kyng caused syr Edward, his eldyst son, to take the castell of Wyndesore by a trayne; and the kynge secretly departed from Westmyster, and rode into the sayd castell, and many of the lordes that toke his parte came to hym. And the barons and the other that toke their parte drewe to London; but yet, by some well disposed persons, a concorde was takyng thus, that bothe partes shulde abyde the iugement of Lewys, the Frenche kynge, concernyng the kepyng of the sayd ordynances. Wherfore the kynge and syr Edward, his eldyst son, went ouer to the sayd Lewys, and, for the barons parte, there went syr Peter de Mountforde and other; before whiche kynge Lewys the mater was argued; but, in conclusion, kynge Lewys gaue sentence that the sayd statutes and ordynances shulde be clerely

The barons
rose agaynst
the kyng.

voyde, and the kynge set at lyberte. After whiche sentence gyuen, y kyng, and all the other, returned into London; but the barons, nat content with this sentence, (reputynge parcialyte in kynge Lewys,) departed and went into the marches of Wales, and gathered a great nombre of people, and came into London; and than, because some varyaunce was betwene some of the rulers of the citey and the cōmons, the cōmons made them two captaynes, callynge them constables of the citey; at whose cōmaundement all the cōmysn, by tollynge of the great bell of Polles, shulde be redy in harnes to wayte vpon them. Whiche constables, with the cōmons, (by the exortynge of Hughe Spencer, constable of y Towre) went to Thystelworth, beyonde Westmyster, and there spoyled the maner of the kynge of Romainys; whiche dede was the great cause of the warre; for the kynge toke it greuously, and gathered great power, and, at the last, came to the towne of Lewys, in Sussex; but the wardens of the fyue partes kept the see with shyppes, y no straungers shulde entre to ayde the kynge. And than the barons, with a great multytude of y citey of Lōdon, and with a great hoost of other people, came agaynst the kynge, betwene whome, the .xxiii. day of May was fought a maruelous cruell battell, at Lewys; and the Lōdoners, that gaue the fyrst assent, by reason of the sharpe shot of arowes, and strokes gyuen by them of the kynges partes, began to drawe backe.

The battell at
Lewys.

But the barons incurraged theyr men in suche wyse y they nat onely set vpon them with fresshe men, but incurraged so them that gaue backe, y they turned agayne, and fought so fersly that the kynges parte gaue backe, and the kyng lost the fylde; where the kyng hym selfe, and the kyng of Romainys, and Edward, the kynges son, were takyn prisoners, and many others mo, and .xx.M. men slayne, for this battell cōtynued y more part of the day. After whiche battell endyd they brought their prisoners to London; where the kynge agreed, y all the said ordynaūces shulde stonde in effecte; and if any were thought vnresonable, to be correctyd by .iiii. noble men of the realme, .s.ii. spirytual men and .ii. temperall men; and

many instrumentis and wrytynges were made for the assurance of the same.

¶ After this, a great discencyon fell betwene þy erle of Glocester and the erle of Leyceter, whiche were two of the barons þy were agaynst the kyng. Wherfore, sone after, syr Edwarde, the kynges son, departed to the marches of Wales, and accōpanyed the erle of Glocester and the lordes of the marches, and assembled a great power and came to Glocester. Wherfore syr Symon, the erle of Leyceters son, by his fathers cōmaundement, assembled a great power and came to Wynchester, and toke it by force; and after came to Kyllingworth; where syr Edwarde, the kynges son, mete them, and dyd discōfort them; and syr Symon fled, and dyuers of his cōpanye were takyn prisoners. But after that, syr Symon Mounforde, the erle of Leyceter hym selfe, gatheryd a great cōpany, and met with the sayd syr Edwarde at Enesham, where betwene them was fought a cruell battell, where syr Symon, the erle, was slayne, and many other that toke the barons parte. And after, at a parlyment holden at Wynchester, all the statutes and ordynaūces made at Oxenforde were vtterly adnulled, and all bondes and wrytynges made for the same were cancelled and brokyn. And after that, the kyng came to Wyndsore, and intendynge to haue dystroyed the citeye of London; but the mayre and aldermen, and other of citezys, put them into the kynges mercye and grace at Wyndsore; whervpon they were cōmytted to prison, and put out of theyr offyces, and the cōstable of the Towre made custos of the citeye. But after, they were restored and pardoned, and the citeye payde to the kyng, for a fyne, .xx.M. markes.

Battel at
Kyllingworth.

Battel at
Enesham.

The lybertes
of London
seasyd.

¶ After this, at a parlyament holdyn at Northampton, many þy toke the barons parte were disinheryte; whiche therfore gathered them to gyther, and went to the yle of Elye, and kept it w strength.

¶ Also, about the .l. yere of his reyne, he ordeyned the statutes

The stan-
dard of
weyghtes
and mesures.

of Marleburyge; and, about the .li. yere, the statutes were made and ordayned for weyghtes and mesures: that is to say, that .xxxii. greynes of whete, drye and rounde, and takyn in the myddes of \hat{y} ere, shulde wey a sterlynge peny; and .xx. of those sterlyng pens shulde make an vnce; and .xii. vnce shulde make a ponde troy; and .viii. ponde troy shulde wey a galon of wyne; and .viii. galons of wine shulde make a busshell of London, whiche is the .viii. parte of a quarter. After that .iii. barly cornes, drye and rounde, shulde make an ynche, and .xii. ynches to a fote, and .iii. fote to a yarde, and .v. yardes and a halfe to a perche, or pole, and .xl. pole in lengthe, and foure in brede, to make an acre of lande. And this stādardes of weyght were cōfyrmed the .xv. yere of Edward the .iii.; and also in the tyme of Henry the .vi. and Edward the .iiii.; and lastly cōfyrmed in the .xi. yere of Henry the .vii. Howe be it, in the tyme of kynge Henry the .vi. it was ordayned that the same vnce shulde be deuyded in .xxx. partes, called .xxx. pens; and in kyng Edward the .iiii. his tyme, into .xl. partes, called .xl. pens; and in kynge Henry the .viii. his dayes, into .xliiii. partes, called .iii. s. viii. d. but the weyght of the vnce troy, and the mesure of the fote, was ordayned euer to be at one stynt. In the .lii. yere of his reyne, \hat{y} erle of Glocester refused the kyng, and in the marches of Wales gatheryd moche people; and many of the cōpany disinheryted drewe to hym, whiche came to the citey of London; and by intreteye, and fayre meanes and polecye, came into the citey; and many of the cōmons toke his parte, and fortifyed the citey with bulwarkes and barbycans. And shortely after, the kynge came to Stretforde of the Bowe, with a great cōpany. But, by the meanes of one Octobanus, \hat{y} popes legate, whiche than lay in London, a peace was takyn, and so the warre was endyd. Also, duryng the whyle of all this said besynesse, after that, syr Edward, the kynges son, had the victory tyll almost the later ende of this kynges reyne. There were but fewe mayres of the citey of London; but the franchises of London were seasyd into the kynges handes; and there were ordayned custodies and gardens, and no mayres; and who that was cōstable of the towre was also

Lybertes of
London.

custos of the citye. In the .lv. yere of this kynge, syr Edwarde, the kynges son, toke his iourney into the Holy Lāde, whiche went to the Voyage into the Holy Lāde. citye of Acres, and defended it from the Soudan of Surrey, whiche, after his cōmynge, beseged it with .l.M. Sarazyns ; whiche citye had byn lost if the sayd syr Edwarde had nat come and manfully defendyd it. Also, in the .lvi. yere of this kynges reyne, his son Edwarde thus beyng in the Holy Lande, kyng Henry fell sicke at Westmyster, and dyed the .xvi. day Nouerbre, the yere of Chryst .M.CC.lxxii. and is buryed at Westmyster.

卷之五
五



Edward
duke.



Edwarde the fyrst.



EDWARDE, the fyrst of that name, and sonne to Henry the Thyrd, after he harde of the deth of his father, came from the Holy Lande, and was crowned kynge at Westmyster the .xix. day of Auguste, the yere of Christ .M.CC.lxxiii.; at whiche tyme Alexander, kyng of Scottes, was present, and dyd homage to kynge Edwarde. In the seconde yere of this kynges reyne, the kynge went into Wales, and there subdued Lewellyn, prynce of Wales, whiche after y rebelled, and was subdued agayne, and payde to the kyng a fyne of .l.M. markes. Also, ^{Lewellyn prince of Wales.} in the .iii. yere of this kynges reyne, were made the statutes called Westmyster Primer; where ben containned goodly statutes, fyrst howe clerkes, indyted of felonye, shalbe delyuered to the ordynaryes, and of assise, of pleses of lande, of atteyntes, and many other goodly statutes.

¶ In the .vi. yere of this kynge, the chauncery, cōmyn place, and eschequer, were remoued to Glocester, where dyuers statutes were made, but the courtes contynued there but for one terme. And about this tyme there was a parlyament at London, for reformacyon of the kynges coyne, whiche was clypped and wasshed by the Jewes; and almost .iii.C. Jewes were cast therfore. And about the same tyme began the foundacyon of the house of the freres prechours, at Ludgate.

¶ In the .x. yere of this kynge, Lewellyn prince of Wales, rebellyd agayne; and the kynge sent thither therles of Northumberlande and Surrey, with many other knyghtes. But Dauyd, brother to Lewellyn, with a great power, met with them nere to a place called Hauardyne, where betwene them was a great battell, where the ^{Battell in Wales.}

Welchemen had the victorie, and the erles fled, and many of the Englysshemen slayne and taken. But the next yere after, ŷ kyng sent thither a more power, to besege ŷ castell of Snowden; but many of thenglysshemen were drowned, beyng vpon a brydge made of barges and planks; but after that, they pursued so the Welchemen, that Lewellyn, and Dauyd, his brother, fledde; but after, Lewellyn was takyn by syr Edmonde Mortymer, whiche smote of his heed and sent it to the kyng; and after, by dome of all the lordes, he and his heyres were disinheryte for euer. And after that, Dauyd, his brother, was taken, and after drawne, hanged, and quarterde. And after, the kyng set Walys in an order, and ordayned shyres and sheryffes, and other offycers, as be in Englande.

Lybertes of
London
seased.

¶ Also, in the .xiii. yere of this kyng, the kyng seasyd the lybertes of London into his handes, because the mayre toke brybes of the bakers, and suffred them to sell brede vnder the syse.

¶ Also in the same yere, in the contrey called ŷ Sweterers, a woman was delyuerde of a chylde, whiche, from the nauyll upwarde, was .ii. complete bodyes, .s. two hedes and foure armes, and .ii. bodyes; and downwarde but .ii. legges, which, with theyr armes, beclyppe eche others body. And another woman bare a chylde, whiche had a face lyke to a man, and all the body lyke a lyon, with tayle and other fetures therto. Also about this tyme, the marchantes straūgers, whiche longe before were wont to be lodged with Englysshe hoostes whiche vttred theyr ware, had gote them howses for the stowage of theyr wares, and solde by theyr owne weyghtes, to the disceyte of the people; whiche were founde therwith, and taken and sent to the Towre of London, and sore prisoned, and theyr weyghtes brent, and payde therfore great fynes to the kyng.

¶ Also, in the .xv. yere of this kyng, the somer was so hote that men dyed for heate. But the nexte yere there were great stormes of hayle and rayne, that sore distemperde the grounde, ŷ there was a

meruaylous great derthe of corne, that whete rose to .xviii.d. a Derthe. bussell, and yere by yere increased, tyll it came to .xl.s. a quarter, whiche was a great pryce, for at that tyme .xx.d. weyed alway one vnce of syluer; whiche so contynued tyll the reygne of kynge Henry the .vi. whiche than was changed to .xxx.d. an ounce: and in the tyme of kyng Edward the .iiii. to .xl.d. an ounce; and in the tyme of kynge Henry the .viii. to .iii.s. viii.d. an ounce; but the standarde of the ounce was euer at one stynt, as is before rehersed in the .li. yere of kynge Henry the .iii. and as in the statute than made more playnly appereth.

¶ About the .xvi. yere of this kynge, one Ryse Merydocke rebelled agaynst the kinges gardeyn of his castels in Wales; but the kynge than beyng in Normandye, cōmaunded the erle of Cornewalle, the kynges leue tenant in Englande, to arere an hoost to subdewe this Ryse; and so he dyd, and went into Wales and toke this Ryse, and brought him to Yorke, where he was drawne, hanged, and quartred.

¶ In the .xviii. yere of this kynge, dyuers of his justices were accused of dyuers offences, as syr 'Thomas Weylande, Adam Stretton, and other; wherfore some of them were outlawed and lost theyr goodes, and some imprisoned, and some delyuered with payenge of great fynes. ^{The iuges punysshed.}

¶ Also about this tyme, the wolle staple was ordayned to be kept at Sandewyche, and the Jewes were clerely banysshed Englande; for the whiche the cōmons gaue to the kynge a fyftene parte of theyr goodes. Also, sone after this, by styrrynge of one Madocke, the Welchemen rebelled agayne; wherfore the kynge came with a great power, and wanne from them the Ile of Anglesey, and bylded newe the towne of Beumarys and ŷ castell, and cut downe the woddes in the contrey, and repayred and fortifyed so many castels that he compelled the Welchemen to leaue theyr olde maner of rauenyng and ^{Welchemen subdued.}

stelynge, that they were cōpelled to fall to tyll the grounde, and to other occupacyons, and to lyue after the maner of Englysshemen; so that more and more the contrey grewe to rest and peace, and Madocke after was taken, drawne, and hanged.

¶ About the .xxiiii. yere of this kyng, after the dethe of Alexander, kyng of Scottes, great varyance was amonge the Scottes, whether Johā Bayloffe, that had maryed kyng Alexander's eldyst doughter, or Robert le Bruse, ŷ maryed his .ii. doughter, or Hastynge, ŷ maryed his .iii. doughter, shulde be kyng; but the Scottes put them all to kyng Edwardes iugement; and the kyng and the Scottes met all at Norham, where ŷ kyng named and admytted syr Johā Baylolle for kyng of Scottes, whiche in mediatly than dyd homage to kyng Edward; and yet, anone after this, Baylolle rebelled; wherefore kyng Edward, with a great hoost, layde sege to the towne of Berwyke; but the Scottes defended it so, and brent some of theyr shyppes, that the Englysshemen gaue backe; wherefore the Scottes of pryde made this ryme:

Sege at
Berwyke.

What wenes kyng Edward, with his longe shankes,
To haue won Berwyke all our vnthankes,
Gaas
Pykes hym,
And when he has it
Gaas
Dykes hym.

But kyng Edward than, herynge of theyr pryde and scornefull ryme, was moued greatly, and so incurraged his men, that fyrst they wanne the dyches, and after the bulwarkes, and, in the ende, wanne the towne by force, and slewe of the Scottes to the nombre of .xxv.M. and after sent a parte of his hoost to lay sege at Dunbarre; to whome a great hoost of Scottes came to remoue the sege, and fought with the Englysshemen a fyers battell, but the Englysshemen had the

Battell in
Scottlāde.

victorye, and slewe of the Scottes .xx.M. And the Englysshemen in reproche of the Scottes, made this ryme :

The skaterande Scottes, holde we for sottes, of wrenches vnware,
Erly in a mornynge, in a euyll tymynge, came they to Dumbare.

And than Baylolle, kynge of Scottes, and many other lordes, dyd put them in the kynges grace, whiche than brought them to London; and yet, after that, delyuered them agayne, takynge their othes vpon the sacrament neuer to bere armes agaynste kynge Edward; and than they were delyuered. And so, after that, Baylolle went ouer into Fraunce, and neuer came agayne. Whyle y^e kynge was thus occupied in Scotlande, the Englysshemen sustayned many hurtes in Gascoyn and Guyan, for the erle of Artoys skyrmysshed ofte tymes with the Englysshemen, and at the last toke syr Johⁿ Saynt Johⁿ, syr Willyam Mortymer, and dyuers other prisoners, whiche were conueyed to Fraunce, to dyuers prisons.

¶ Also about this tyme the cytezens of London were restored to theyr lybertes, whiche in some parte had ben kept from them by the space of .xii. yeres; so that, in stede of mayres, there were custodies, or gardayns, whiche was because they mysordered the justyce of the citye; but for this restorynge they payde .iii.M. markes.

¶ In the .xxvi. yere, kynge Edward went ouer into Flaunders, to ayde Guy, erle of Flaunders, agaynst the Frenche kynge. And the Frenche kynge drewe towarde the kynge; but, by mediacyon of fryndes, at y^e last a peace was made betwene them all. But in this whyle, the Scottes herynge of the warre in Flaunders, because theyr kynge was fled into Fraunce, made them a newe kynge, called Walys, <sup>Walys of
Scotlāde.</sup> and rose agayne, and entred into Northumberlāde; but the kynge sent his letters to the lordes of Englande, whiche, by his cōmaundement, gathered a great power and went into Scotlande, where betwene them was skyrmysshes, and many Englysshemen slayne; for

Battel at
Fākyrke.

the Scottes kept theyr holdes, and wolde nat come to no playne fylde. But the nexte yere after, kyng Edwarde gathered a great power, and went hym selfe into Scotlāde, where the Scottes, with a great hoost, met him at a place called Fankyrke; where betwene them was fought a cruell battell; but in the ende, the Englysshemen had the victorie, and slewe of the Scottes to ŷ nombre of .xxxii.M. and but fewe of the Englysshemen. But yet, the nexte yere after, the kyng layde sege to the castell of Estreuelyn, where, at the last, the Scottes that were therin yelded the castell, and sware them selves to the kynges alegeaunce; and Walys, herynge therof, fledde into the mareyses for his suerte, for feare of the kynges hoost, and kept hym so longe tyme that all the cōmons of Scotlande presented them selfe to the kyng by great companyes, and put them into the kynges grace, and the rulers and offycers of cityes, townes, boroughes, were sworne to kyng Edwarde.

Trolbaston.

¶ Sone after this, kyng Edwarde returned into Englande, where many complayntes were made to hym of his offycers, as of mayres, sheryffes, baylyffes, exchetours, and dyuers other. Wherfore he ordayned his justyce to make inquisicyons therof: whiche after was called Trolbaston; where, by forfeytours and fynes, the kyng recouered innumerable treasour agaynst suche offenders, and fylled his cofers agayne. Neuerthelesse, this kyng dyd great good within the realme of Englande, for those offenders were well chastyced, and were moche more meker and better, and the pore cōmons lyued in moche more rest and peace.

The kyng
imprysoned
Edwarde,
his eldist
son.

¶ Also about this tyme, syr Edwarde, the kynges eldest sonne, by the wanton counsell of Piers Ganeston, brake the bysshop of Chesters parke, and ryottuously destroyed his game; wherfore the kyng imprysoned his sonne, and other that were with hym, and after banysshed the sayde Piers out of Englande.

¶ Also, about the .xxxiii. yere of kyng Edwarde, Walys, the

Scotte, was taken and brought to London, and drawne, hanged, and quartred. And anone after that, the bysshoppe of Saynt Andrewes, Robert le Bruse, syr Symon Frysell, erle of Dumber, syr Johā Cambres, erle of Atlas, and syr Johā Comyn, with many other, came to Westmyster by theyr voluntarye wylls, and were sworne to be trewe to kynge Edwarde, and to kepe Scotlande to his vse. But sone after that, Robert le Bruse, contrarye to his othe, gate a dispensacyon for his othe, of pope Clement the .v. and toke vpon hym to be kynge of Scotlande, and slewe syr Johā Comyn, and his brother, that counselled hym to the contrarye. And sone after, kynge Edwarde came into Scotlande agayne, with a stronge power; and Robert le Bruse met hym, with a great nombre, at a playne nyghe Saynt Johans towne, where there was fought a cruell battell, but the Scottes Batell in
Scotlāde. were discomfyt, and .vii. thousande Scottes there slayne; and there were dyuers bysshoppes and abbottes taken, and dyuers other temporall lordes. And Robert le Bruse fled vnto the kynge of Norway, and kynge Edwarde sent the bysshoppes and abbottes that were taken in the fylde to the pope, and sent the temperall lordes, and other of the Scottes that were takyn, vnto London, where they were put to dethe.

¶ Also, in the .xxxv. yere of kynge Edwarde, as he returned towarde Englāde, he fell sycke; wherfore he sware his lordes to be trewe to Edwarde, his eldyst son; and also charged his sayd son, vpon his blessynge, that he shulde neuer suffer Piers of Ganeston to returne into Englande, and sware his lordes to stycke to the same; and the kynges son and they all graunted therto, and in ȝ .vii. day of Julii, in the yere of Chryst .M.CCC.vii. he dyed, and is buried at Westmyster.



Edwardus. H.



Edwarde the Seconde.



EDWARDE, the seconde of that name, and son to Edwarde the Fyrst, borne at Carnaruan; was crowned kynge the .xxiiii. day of February, the yere of Chryst .M.CCC.vii. after the countynge of Englande. This kynge was fayre, stronge of body, but vnstydfast of condicyons; for he refused the company of his lordes and wyse men, and haunted the company of vyle persons, and gaue hym to great drynkyng, and lyghtly wolde discouer thynges of great counsell, whiche turned hym after to great hurte, and the realme to great vniquietnesse. This kynge, as sone as his father was buryed, sent for Piers of Ganeston, his olde compyre, and aduaunced hym to great honour, contrary to the promyse that he made to his father. This kynge, in the seconde yere of his reyne, went ouer into Fraunce, and maryed Isabell, doughter to Philyppe le Belle, kynge of Fraunce, and after with her returned into Englande. This kynge, for the displeasure done before to hym by y bysshopp of Chester, put the sayd bysshopp in the Towre, in straye prison; but the lordes whiche y kynges father, in his dethbede, sware to be trewe to his son, came to the kynge, and spake so to the kynge that, contrary to the kynges mynde, this Piers was banysshed into Irelande; but the kynge secretly comforted hym with great gyftes, and made hym chefe ruler of the contrey. But after that, for the auoydynge of grudge betwene y kynge and the lordes, the sayd Piers was suffered to come into Englande agayne, and had the rule of all the kynges iewels, and spende and wasted moche of the kynges treasure, that shortely after, by y labour of the lordes, he was exyled agayne into Flaunders, to the kynges displeasure.

Piers of
Ganeston
exyled.

¶ About this tyme, the knightes of Saynt Johan wanne the citee

The Rodes
won from
the Turkes.

The temples
dystroyed.

Piers of
Ganastō be-
heded.

of the Rodes from þ Turkes. Also the templers landes, for that they vsed thynges contrary to the faythe of Christ, were gyuen to them of Saynt Johans, and the templers were dystroyed thorowe out all Chrystendome; and about this tyme the order of the crossyd freres came fyrst into Englande. This Piers of Ganeston was suffered to come agayne into Englande, whiche than demeaned hym selfe moche wors than euer he dyd before, and waxed proude, and reuyled so the lordes that they were sore moued agaynst hym, that sodaynly they rose, and beseged hym in the castell of Scarbrugh, and at the last wanne it, and toke it, and brought hym to a place besyde Warwyke, and there stroke of his hede, wherwith the kynge was greatly displeasyd.

Batell at
Bannokis-
borne.

¶ About the .vi. yere of this kynge, Robert le Bruse, herynge of the dyuisyon betwene the kynge and his lordes, came agayne into Scotlande, and there was admytted as kynge: wherfore kyng Edward prepared a great armye, and went into Scotlāde; agaynst whome came Robert le Bruse with a great power of Scottes, and they met at a place nyghe a ryuer called Bannokisborne, where was fought a great batell, but the Englysshemen lost the fylde, and many of the lordes and great men of Englande were slayne and taken, and the kynge, with a fewe of his hoost fled, and escaped with great daunger into Berwyke; wherfore the Scottes were so inflamed with suche pryde, that they made this ryme:

Ye maydens of Englande nowe may ye morne,
For ye haue lost your lemans at Bannokes borne,
With heue a lowe,
What weanes the kynge of Englande,
So sone to wonne Scotlande,
With rumbelowe.

¶ In the .ix. yere of kyng Edward, Robert le Bruse, kynge of Scottes, gatte Berwyke, which was by treason, as the fame went. And the nexte yere after, the Scottes entred Northūberlande, and

brent and slewe man, woman, and chylde, and the contrey therby greatly hurte. And yet to this myschefe was ioyned another, that vytell and corne was so scant, that the people were fayne to eate hors flesshe and dogges flesshe, and some stale chylderne and ete them; and many, for defaute of vytell, dyed. And after insued great pestylence and mortalyte, that the people of Englāde wondersly decayde. Yet these monicyons mended nat the kyng of his yuell lyuyng.

¶ Also, about the .xi. yere of his reyne, he assembled a great hoost of the Southe and Eest partes of Englande, and came and besieged Berwyke. Wherefore the Scottes gathered a great company, and came into Englande another way, into the marches of Yorke shyre, and there slewe moche people. Wherefore the archebyssshop of Yorke, and other abbottes, pryours, clerkes, withe husbandemen, assembled a great companye, and gaue them battell at a place called ^{Battel of} Mytton, where the Englysshemen were discomfyte, and many of them slayne, but the archebyssshop, and the abbot of Selby, and dyuers other there escaped. But because there were so many spirituall men there slayne, it was called therfore the whyte battell. And whan kyng Edwarde harde therof, because it was nyghe wynter he brake up his sege, and returned into Yorke. Also about this tyme there was nothyng done but by the aduyse of Hughe Spencer the father, and Hughe Spencer the son; and the cōmons had them in as great hateryd as they had Piers of Ganeston before.

¶ Also in the .xii. yere of this kyng, two legates, whiche came from Rome, made great labour to conclude a peace betwene the kyng of Englāde and the Scottes; but that auayled nat; wherefore kyng Edwarde gatte a curse of pope Johā, to accurse Robert le Bruse, and all other that toke his parte, that had hurte the reame of Englande, and that to stande in strength tyll they had recōpensed for all harmes done to Englande; but it auayled nothyng, but put Englande to great cost for the optaynyng therof. Also, when the barons of Englāde sawe this mysterye, that ŷ Spencers mys gouerned all the realme,

Spencers
banysshed.

Battel at
Borough
bryg.

they assembled them to gether, and made a request to the kyng, that he shulde remoue the Spencers from his person; wherfore there was a parlyment called at Lōdon, and the barons came thyder with a great company, in iakettes of yelow and grene, and a bande of whyte cast ouerthwarte; and therefore it was called the parlyment of whyte bandes. At whiche parlyment bothe the Spencers were banysshed the lande for terme of theyr lyues; and they toke shyppynge at Douer, and so voyded the lande. But it was nat longe after but the kyng, contrarye to that ordynance made in the parlyment, sent for these Spencers agayne, and set them in hyghe auctorite, and ruled all thyng after theyr sensuall appetytes, nothyng regardynge justyce nor the cōmen welthe; wherfore the barons, intendyng agayne to reforme these myschefe, assembled their powers; but the kyng made so hasty spede, and gathered his people so sone, and was strōger than they, and pursued them so in dyuers places, that the barons euer fled; that, in the ende, Thomas, erle of Lācaster, was taken by one Andrewe of Härkeley, (whome the kyng sent w̄ a great power,) at ȝ battell of Borough brygge, where many other of the barons were slayne and taken. And after that, the sayd erle of Lancaster, and dyuers other of the barons and knyghtes, were put to dethe. And after that, the kynges power and the Spencers powers greatly increasyd, and the barons powers decayde by the space of .v. yere contenuynge; in whiche tyme, one Robert Baldocke, whiche was a man of euyl fame, was chaunceler of Englande; by whose meanes the kyng gathered many forfettes and fynes of his people, contrary to good order of justyce.

Battell in
Irelande.

¶ In the .xv. yere of this kyng, one Edwarde le Bruse, brother to the kyng of Scottes, with a great power, entred into Irelande, intendyng to haue wonne that lande; but the people of Irelande quytte them so well, that they venquysshed the Scottes, and slewe Edwarde le Bruse, and many of the nobles of Scotlande, and many other, and droue the resydewe out of the contrey.

¶ Also, the .xvi. yere, the kynge prepared a meruaylous great armye, as some wryters reporte, to the nombre of .C.M. and inuaded Scotlande. But the Scottes, for fere of the great multytude, drewe them to moūtaynes and other places, ȳ the Englysshe hoost preuayled lyttell agaynst them ; wherfore the kynge returned agayne into Englande, because many of his people there perysshed for lacke of vytell. Wherfore syr James Dudglas, with a great nombre of Scottes, folowed and met with the kynge at a place called Leylande, in Northumber-
Battel at
Leylāde. lande, where was betwene them a great battell, but the Englysshemmen lost the fylde, and the kynge fled, and escaped with great daunger. In whiche battell the erle of Rychemonde was taken prisoner, and many men slayne, and dyuers other men taken, and the kynges treasure and his ordynaūce was takyn and conueyed into Scotlande. But this fylde was loste by the treason of the sayd Andrewe of Harkelley, whome ȳ kynge had made erle of Carlyll ; whiche had a great nombre of people, and cōmyng to the ayde of ȳ kynge, toke secretly a great sōme of money of the sayd Dudglas, and so betrayed the kynge, and came nat at the fylde ; whiche was cause ȳ the kynge lost the fylde ; for the whiche dede the sayd Andrewe was after drawne, hanged, and quartered. About this tyme, warre began agayne betwene the Frenchemen and the Englysshemmen and Gascons, in Guyan ; for the pacifyenge of whiche warre, kyng Edward sent ouer the quene, his wyfe, to her brother, the Frenche kynge ;
Quene Isa-
bell went into
Fraunce. and whyle she was there, Edward, ȳ kynges eldyst son, beyng .xiii. yere of age, asked leaue of his father to go into Fraūce to his mother, and to se his vncle, Philyppe le Belle, kyng of Fraunce ; and had leaue, and departed. And because kyng Edward had denyed to do homage to the kynge of Fraūce for the duchye of Guyan, the sayd kyng Philyppe there made Edward, the kynge of Englande his eldyst son, duke of Guyan ; wherwith kyng Edward was nat content, and dyd exyle bothe the quene and his sayd son out of Englande, by the counsell of the Spencers, and of syr Robert Baldocke, his chaūcellour. Wherfore the kynge made opyn proclamacyons, that yf the quene and her son came nat into Englande by a certayne

^e
Y quene
landed.

Kyng Ed-
warde
takyn.

day, that they shulde be take as ennemyes to the kynge; before the whiche day they came nat, wherfore the kynge seased all the quenes landes, and his sons landes, and toke the hole profyte therof. And after, the kynge sent suche worde and thretenynges to the kynge of Fraunce, that he was compelled to auoyde the quene out of Fraunce; wherfore she and her son went to the erle of Heynaude; where Edward, her son, was shortly after contracte to Philyppe, y sayd erles doughter. And whan this was knownen, dyuers men of name of Englāde came ouer to the quene; and sone after the erle of Henaude prepared .v.C. men of armes; of the whiche, one syr Johñ of Henaude, the erles brother, was captayne; and sent them ouer with the quene and her son into Englande; whiche landed besyde Harwiche, in Suffolke; to whome a great nombre of people anone resorted to her ayde. And than she came with great spede towarde London, where the kynge at that tyme was; whiche herynge therof, for fere fled towarde Walys, with a small companye, and lefte the bysshop of Excester behynde hym, to gouerne London. And than the quene sent a letter to the mayre and cōmynalte of London; whiche letter was tacked vpon the crosse in Chepe, and dyuers copyes therof set vp in dyuers other places. Wherfore this bysshop of Excester sent to the mayre, to haue the keys of the citye, and spake to hym so sharpe wordes, that they fell at suche a varyance that the cōmons of the citye in a rage toke the sayd bysshoppe, and brought hym to the standarde in Chepe, and smote of his hede, and two of his seruantes hedes, and a cyteners hede called Marshall, that was syr Hughe Spencers spye. Than the kynge went to Brystowe, and ordayned syr Hughe Spencer the father, there to kepe castell and the towne; and the kynge, with Hughe Spencer the son, and syr Robert Baldocke, his chauncelour, and the erle of Arondell, went into Walys. And the quene sent the erle of Kent and syr Johñ of Heynaude after them, with a great companye; whiche so pursued them, that fyrst they toke Hughe Spencer the father, at Brystowe, and after pursued the kynge into Walys, and there toke the kynge, and sent hym to the castell of Kenelworthe; and toke Hughe Spencer the son, and syr Robert Baldocke, and the

erle of Arondell, and brought them all to the towne of Herforde. And anone after, syr Hugh Spencer the father, and Hughe Spencer the sonne, were drawne, hanged, and quartered, and syr Johñ of Arundell was beheded, and syr Robert Baldocke put in Newgate, in London, and there shortly after dyed amonge the theues. And anone after, at a parlement holden at Westmyster, the .xxv. day of Januarii, the yere of Chryst .M.CCC.xxvi. the kyng was deposyd of his kyngly dignyte, and he is buryed at Gloucester.

Edm. Augustus Rex



Edw

ardus.iii.



Edwarde the Thyrde.



EDWARDE, the thyrde of that name, son to Edwarde the .ii. and of Isabell, onely doughter of Philyppe le Belle, was crowned kynge the .ii. day of Februarii, the yere of Christ .M.CCC.xxvi. whan he was but .xv. yere of age. In the fyrst yere of his reyne, the Scottes entred into Englande, and the kynge, with a great power, came to them at the parke of Stanhope, and set them rounde about. Yet the Scottes escaped, that the kynge lost that iourney, and returned with lytell honour. And, in the ende of the fyrst yere, he maryed Philyppe, the forsayd erles doughter, of Henaude, at Yorke. Sone after that, the kynge made with the Scottes a peace, and released to them theyr homage, and delyuered vnto them theyr charter or indenture called Ragman, as it was sayd by the counsell of the olde quene and syr Roger Mortymer, whiche anone after was made erle of Marche. And the olde quene and he toke vpon them the rule of the hole realme, wherby many thynges grewe out of order.

Peace ^t w the
Scottes.

¶ About the thyrde yere of this kynge, the erle of Kent, the olde kynges brother, supposynge his brother had ben a lyue, deuysed certayne letters secretly to be sent to his brother, for his delyuerance; wherfore he was accused, and, by auctoryte of parlyament, condempned; and therfore was beheded. This Roger Mortymer was so cruell, couetous, and so proude, that the lordes and people disdayned hym, and by secrete meanes brought him out of the kynges fauour; whervpon, by the kynges mynde, this syr Roger Mortymer was, by a trayne, taken in the castell of Notynggham, where the kynge, the quene, and the olde quene, that tyme lay. And yet syr Roger kept the keys hym selfe. And after, at a parlyament at London he was condempned as a traytour; and after drawne and hanged for dyuers artycles that were layde vnto hym; one was, that by his

Syr Roger
Mortymer
taken.

meanes and treason the Scottes scaped at Stanhope ; and another was, that he caused the forsayde indenture of Ragman to be delyuered to the Scottes, wherby they were relessed of theyr homage, and caused Dauyd, kynge of Scottes, son to Robert le Bruse, to mary Jone, syster to kynge Edwarde; another was, that he had gotten the kynges treasure in his owne handes and wasted it; another was, that he had broken the ordynance made at the coronacyon, that .xii. lordes shulde haue had the rule of the kynge; and that without them there shulde no thyng be done; and that nat withstandynge, he with the olde quene ruled all hym selfe, to the great hurte of the realme; another, that he had caused Edwarde, the kynges father, to be conueyed from Kyllynsworth to the castell of Barkeley; and after, by a letter deuysed by hym selfe, in the kynges name, and sent to the keper, caused hym to be murdred. As touchynge the dethe of this Edwarde of Carnaruan, late before kyng, it is sayd y that syr Roger Mortymer had sent the sayd letter to the keepers, they caused a great table to be layde vpon his bellye, beyng a slepe in his bedde, and pressed it downe with great weyghtes. And afterwarde, they toke an horne and put it into his fundament, and toke a spytte, hote brennyng, and put it thorowe the horne into his body, and so cruelly murdred hym.

The dethe
of kynge
Edwarde
the .ii.

¶ About the .iiii. yere, one Edwarde Baylolle, son to syr Johan Baylolle, somtyme kynge of Scottes, with the eyde of .ii. M. Englysshemen, by kynge Edwardes consent, entred into Scotlande, and claymed the crowne; agaynst whome a great hoost of Scottes came and gaue hym a fyers battell; but Edwarde Baylolle had the victorie, and after was shortely crowned kynge of Scotlande. And after that, kynge Baylolle come to kynge Edwarde, at Newe castell vpon Tyne, and dyd to hym homage for the lande of Scotlande, and returned agayne into Scotlande. But sone after, the Scottes rebelled agaynst Baylolle; wherfore kynge Edwarde Baylolle sent vnto kynge Edwarde of Englande, requyryng hym of helpe. And the kynge of Englande promysed to helpe hym, and gathered a great hoost, and

came towarde the towne of Berwyke; and thyder came kynge Edward Baylolle with his companye; whiche .ii. kynges beseged the towne a longe tyme; but at last a great hoost of Scottes came to the rescuyng of the towne, aboue the nōbre of .lvi.M. and, at a place called Hallydone Hyll, besydes Berwyke, there was betwene these two hoostes fought a marueylous cruell battell, where the kynge of Englande had the victorie; and there were slayne of the Scottes .viii. erles and .ix.C. knyghtes, barons, and baronettes, and .iiii.C. esquyers, and aboue .xxx.M. of the cōmon people; and of the Englysshemen were slayne but fewe persons. And on the morowe, the towne and castell of Berwyke was yelded to kynge Edward, kynge of Englande. Than the kynge of Englande be toke the gudyng of Scotlande to Edward Baylolle, kynge of Scottes. Than Dauyd, sonne of Robert le Bruse, beyng before kynge of Scottes, fled with his wyfe into Fraunce, to Philyppe de Valoys, there beyng kynge, whiche receyued them.

Battel at
Hallydon
Hyll.

¶ About the .vii. yere of kynge Edward, Philyppe, kynge of Fraunce, sent a crewe of Frenchemen to ayde the kynges enemyes in Scotlande; but kynge Edward of Englande went thyder and subdued them.

¶ About the .xii. yere of kynge Edward, because he intended to make tittle to the crowne of Fraunce, by the tittle of Isabell, his mother, he went into Flaunders and into Almayne, and there ioyned hym selfe in amyte with dyuers of the lordes, and with many other townes in Flaunders; wherfore Philyppe, the kynge of Fraunce, supposynge that kynge Edward wolde haue inuaded Fraunce, that yere gathered a great strengthe of people, and lay at Amyas; but kyng Edward entred nat that yere. This Philyppe also the same tyme had a great nauey vpon the see, and .xiii. sayle of them met with .v. Englysshe shyppes, betwene whome there was a great fyght; but the Frenchemen had the victorie, and toke two great shyppes of Englande with great ryches, and caryed them with them into the Frenche stremys, and cast the men ouer the borde.

Battel in
the see.

¶ In the .xiiii. yere of kynge Edward, he returned into Englande, and called his parlyament at Westmyster, and there, by the aduyse of the hole realme, toke vpon hym the tytle to be kynge of Fraunce, and ioyned the armes of Englande to the armes of Fraunce, and bare them quarterly, and asked an ayde towarde his charge; that is to say, the .v. parte of euery mannes goodes, and the custome of wolles for .ii. yere to be payde before hande, the .ix. shefe of euery mannes corne; whiche thynges were there graunted; but or it was gathered the people grudged sore, and therfore the kynge borrowed before hande, of dyuers ryche men, great sommes of money, to be repayde of the money of the forsayde graunt, wherof the citey of London payde .xx.M. markes.

Battel in
the see at
Sluse.

¶ In the .xv. yere of his reyne, as the kynge sayled towarde Flaunders, with a nauy of .CCC. sayle, the Frenche kynges nauy met them in the see, nyghe a place called Sleuse, with .iiii.C. sayle; betwene whiche there was a cruell fyght, that the lyke was neuer sene vpon the see; but, in the ende, kynge Edward had the victorie; and in that fyght there were slayne, as wryters testefye, .xxx.M. Frenche-men; but the Frenche cronycle sayth there were .xxx.M. slayne vpon bothe partes. Sone after this, kynge Edward sent an armye, whiche entred into the borders of Fraunce, and layde sege to the towne of Torney, and lay hym selfe, with a nother great hoost, nygh to the same. And Philyppe, the kynge of Fraunce, came with a nother great hoost, and lodged hym selfe within .iii. myles of kynge Edward. But sone after, by the treatyse of the countes of Henaude, mother to the quene of Englande, and syster to the Frenche kynge, a meane was made betwene the two kynges, for a truse and a peas; and then, what by her intreatye, and also for that that the kynges receyuers had disapoynted hym of money, (whiche he loked for,) kynge Edward gaue up and lefte the sege, and returned into Englande.

¶ About the .xix. yere of this kynge, he made a solempne feest at Wyndesore, and a great justes and tournament, where he deuysed and perfyted substancyally the order of the knyghtes of the garter.

Howe be it some afferme that this order began fyrst by kynge Rycharde Cure de Lyon, at the sege of ŷ cite of Acres, wher in his great necessyte there were but .xxvi. knyghtes that fymely and surely abode by the kynge; wherfore he caused all them to were thonges of blewe leyther about theyr legges; and afterwarde they were called knyghtes of the blewe thonge.

■ In the .xxi. yere, kynge Edward, with .xi.C. sayles, great and smalle, sayled into Normandy, and there wanne dyuers townes and holdes, and costed towarde Roan. But Philyppe, kyng of Fraunce, had entred into Roan before, and brake vp the brydges, so that kynge Edward was fayne to leaue that way, and costed towarde Parys, tyll he came to a place of the Frenche kynges called Sayn Germainys; and the Frenche kynge came as fast on the other syde towarde Parys; but euer the water of Seyne was betwene them; and so nygh they were ofte tymes, that the one hoost myght see the other. But because the Frenche kynge had broken vp the brydges, the hoostes coude neuer mete. Wherfore the Englysshemen sayd that the Frenche kynge brake vp the brydges because he durst nat fyght with the Englysshe hoost; and the Frenchemen sayd that he brake vp the brydges to the intent that the Englysshemen shulde nat escape his daunger. And whan kynge Edward sawe that he myght nat well come to Parys, for brekyng of the brydges, he returned agayne to a towne called Poysy; whiche towne before he had brent; and there than repayred the brydge that kynge Philyppe had broken. But in the repayrynge therof, there came .ii.M. Frenchemen to let the sayd worke; but the archers kept them so of, that many of them were slayne, and ŷ worke was fynnyshed. Than kynge Edward entred the contrey of Pychardy; and, at the last, came to the water of Sōme, and passed the water, and came to a forrest called Cressye. Wherefore kynge Philyppe, with a great hoost, came thyther, and there fought with kynge Edward a great, sharpe, and a mortall battell, where kynge Edward had the victorie; and kynge Philyppe, sore hurte, fled and escaped with great daunger, and many of the lordes

of the Frenche parte were slayne ; that is to say, the kynge of Beame, sonne to Henry the emperour, the duke of Loreyn, the erle of Alaūson, the erle of Bloys, the erles of Flaunders, Saucer, and Harcourt, and of Fyennys, and .viii. bysshoppes, and .xvii. other lordes of name ; and banerettes, knyghtes, and squyers, .xvi.C. ; that in that battell was slayne the floure of all Fraunce, and of cōmons .viii.M. and aboue. This battell was vpon the saterday ; and on the monday nexte, there appered to them a newe hoost of Frenchemen, and gaue them battell ; in whiche battell also kynge Edwarde had the victorie, and slewe moo of the Frenchemen that day than was slayne y saterday before. After this victorie, kynge Edwarde gaue thankes to God, and, within .iiii. dayes after, went to Caleys, and layde sege to that towne, whiche contynued from the fyrst day of Septembre to the .iii. day of August than nexte folowyng, and kept thesee so surely that no vytell coude come vnto them. Than, in the later ende of July, kynge Philyppe came towardes Caleys, with a stronge power, to remoue the sege. And some wryters say that he came too late, for the towne was yelden before he came. And some say, y when kynge Edwarde prepared to gyue hym battell, and a day appoynted betwene them to fyght, y kynge Philyppe cowardely in y nyght before departed, and returned agayne into Fraunce ; and than they of Caleys, perceuyng that, yelded vp the towne to kynge Edwarde.

Caleys
wonne.

¶ Also, in this meane whyle that kynge Edwarde was occupied in the warres in Fraūce, kyng Philyppe, because that Bayloll, kyng of Scottes, was than dede, sent Dauyd le Bruse, somtyme kynge of Scottes, into Scotlāde, with a great armye of Frenchemen, whiche anone recouered the crowne ; whiche Dauyd, by the helpe of some lordes of Scotlande, entered into Northumberlande, and spoyled the contrey without pyte. And than the archebysshoppe of Yorke, with dyuers other lordes and knyghtes, reysed a great people, and met with the Scottes besyde Durham, and gaue them a great battell, where the Englysshemen had the victorie. In whiche battell, Dauyd le Bruse, the kynge of Scottes, syr Willyam Douglas, and

Battell at
Durham.

many other lordes of Scotlāde, were taken prisoners, and brought to the Towre of London; whiche Dauyd was afterwarde raunsomed at a .C.M. markes. Also in the same meane whyle, one Charles de Bloys beseged a castell in Guyan, called the Roche of Aryan, whiche the Englysshemen kept. But one Thomas Agorne, capteyne of the castell, issued out with his people, and gaue the Frenchemen battell, and had the victorie; where many men of name of the Frenche parte were slayne, and the sayd Charles was taken prisoner and brought into Englande.

Battell at
Roche Ary-
an.

Also, sone after this, there fell a great pestylence, nat onely in Fraunce and Englande, but also in all other contreys, aswell in Christendome as in Hethenesse, that people dyed innumerable, and .l.M. persons were buryed in the churche yarde of the Charterhouse, in London; and vpon that folowed great derthe and scarcyte of corne and vyttell.

Also, in the .xxiiii. yere, a knyght of Burgoyne, that was great with the Frenche kynge, called Godfrey Clarney, profered a Januay that had the kepyng of y^e castell of Caleys vnder kynge Edward, a great some of money, to helpe to delyuer to y^e Frenche kynge the towne of Caleys; whiche Januay sent secrete worde therof to the kyng, and yet promysed this Godfrey to delyuer hym the towne; whervpon kynge Edward came ouer secretly into Caleys, y^e fewe men within knewe therof. And, at the day of payment, this Januay receyued his money, and this syr Godfrey, with his people, came nyghe the towne, and came hym selfe ouer in a preuey brydge into y^e towne; and, as sone as he was ouer, the brydge was drawyn, and than the kynge came out with his sworde drawyn, and shewed hym selfe, and cryed ‘Saynt Edward and Saynt George.’ And than the soudyars issued out at preuey posternes, and sodaynly set vpon the Frenchemen, and slewe many of them, to the nombre of .CCC. men of armes, and moo, and toke many prisoners. And than after, the kynge returned into Englande, and brought this Godfrey, and

Skyrmysshe
at Caleys.

many other of the most noblest men of them that were taken prisoners, with hym into Englande. And, in the ende of this yere, dyed Philyppe de Valoys, kynge of Fraunce, and kynge Johā succeded hym.

In the .xxv. yere, a noble man of Spayne, whome the Frenche kynge faouored, came with a great nauy into the Englysshe stremes, and dyd great hurt; wherfore kyng Edward gathered his nauy and met them in the see, vpon the cost of Wynchelsey; betwene whome there was a great fyght, and moche people slayne vpon bothe partes; but in the ende, kynge Edward had y victorye, and toke .xxii. of theyr shyppes, and many other prisoners. Also, in the .xxv. yere, the kynge stablysshed his coyne of golde and syluer, and ordayned that .iiii. sterlynge pens shulde make a grote, and .v. grotes shulde make an ounce, and .xii. ounce shulde make a pounce troy, and a noble of golde shulde go for halfe a marke, and .xl. pens for halfe a noble, and .xx.d. for a farthyng of golde, and .xii. of those farthynges of golde dyd way an ounce.

About the .xxvi. yere of this kynge, the castell of Guynes was yelden to the Englysshemen in Caley; and the same yere, syr Guy de Meale, marshall of Fraūce, gaue battell to the Englysshemen in Bryttayn, but the Frenche men lost all, and syr Guy, and dyuers other lordes of Fraūce, were slayne there, and dyuers taken prisoners.

In the .xxix. yere, prince Edward, the kinges eldyst sonne, entred Gascoyne, with a great host, and spoyled the contrey. And in the same yere, king Edward landed at Caley, with a great armye, and after went into Fraunce. But anone, tythynges came to hym that the Scottes had wonne the towne of Berwyke, and had layde sege to the castell; wherfore kynge Edward returned shortely, and went to Berwyke, and wanne the towne agayne, and punysshed so the kynge of Scottes, that at the last he caused hym to submytte hym selfe as prisoner, and receyued his power and tytle of

The kyng
of Scottes
taken pri-
soner.

the crowne of Scotlāde into kynge Edwardes handes. Wherfore he returned, with the kyng of Scottes, into London. But the Frenchemen say, ŷ kynge Edwarde returned out of Fraunce for feare of the Frenche kynge, whiche was cōmyng from Amyas with a great power, to haue fought with kynge Edwarde.

¶ Also about this season, that is to say, in the .xxx. yere of kyng Edwarde, whyle that kynge Edwarde was occupied at Berwyke, prince Edwarde had taken many ryche prisoners and pyllages in Gascoyne, and came to Burdeux without any battell; and the duke of Lācaster, with the eyde of Philyppe, brother to the kynge of Nauerne, made warre in the contrey of Constantyne.

¶ Than kynge Joh̄n of Fraunce, came with a great power toward the duke; but he myght nat wyne vnto hym, for the passages were so fortifyed, therfore he made toward prince Edwarde, and wanne dyuers castels by the way.

¶ This prince Edwarde was than at a place called Leyre; to whome there came a great armye of the nobles of Fraunce, and gaue to hym a sharpe battell; but prince Edwarde had the victorie, and slewe many of his enemyes, and toke many prisoners, and sent them to Burdeux, and went hymselfe toward Towres. And in this meane whyle, the duke of Lancaster came from the castell of Lyseux, whiche he had repayred, and returned to Bryttayn, and spoyled, brent, and toke many holdes by the way. And than kynge Joh̄n, holdyng his way, came to the citeye of Towres, to fortifye it, and prince Edwarde toke his wey toward Poyters, in whiche way he mette an hoost of Frenchemen, and fought with them, and put them to flyght, and slewe .C. of them, and toke .ix. prisoners, and sent .iiii. or .v. of the noble men of them vnto Burdeux; and after that, lodged hym selfe in a place nyghe Poyters. And after that, the Frenche kynge came with his hoost, and lodged hym selfe nyghe vnto Poyters; so that ŷ vawewardes of bothe hoostes lay within halfe a myle of

Battell at
Poyters.

other. And than, in the mornynge, the duke of Athens, hauynge the rule of the Frenche kynges vawewarde, set vpon ŷ Englysshe hoost, which had so fensed them selfe with woode and trees that the Frenche speres myght nat wyne to them, for the Englysshemen bete them so with arowes that they turned ouer bothe hors and man. And in the same season, the duke of Normandy, kynge Johāns son, whiche was leder of a nother hoost, assayled them vpon a nother parte; but these .iii. battels dyd lytell hurte to the Englysshemen, for they slewe so many by shotte of arowes, that these .iii. hoostes were discomfyt. Than kynge Johā, seynge this, comforted his people, and he hym selfe, with a fresshe company, set vpon them agayne; but the Englysshemen kept them so together, and fought so sore, that the Frenchemen gaue backe, whome the Englysshemen than fersly folowed, and slewe of them without pyte; where there was slayne the duke of Burgoyne, the duke of Athens, syr Johan Cleremount, marshall of Fraūce, with many lordes, baronettes, knyghtes, and men of armes, to the nombre .xvii.C. and .iii.M. of other meane persons. And there was taken prisoners Johā, kynge of Fraūce, Philyppe, his .iiii. sonne, the erle of Poeteowe, the erle of Ewe, the erle of Languyle, the erle of Tankeruyle, the archebysshoppe of Sens, the erles of Dampmatyne, Vandosme, of Salysbruche, and of Moyson, and many other great lordes baronettes, and knyghtes, and men of name, to the nombre of .xvi.C. And after this fylde, thus wonne, the prince returned with his prisoners to Burdeux; and sone after that, the prince, with his prisoners, toke shyppe, and aryued in Englande, and brought them thorowe the cite of London into Westmyster, where kynge Edward, syttyng in his estate in Westmyster Hall, receyued them with honour. After ŷ, there was a solempne justyce in Smythfylde, where than were present ŷ kynge of Englande, the Frenche kynge, and the kyng of Scottes, with many other noble estates, wherof the most parte of the straungers were prisoners.

Kynge
Johan of
Fraunce
takyn pri-
soner.

¶ Also, in the .xxxiii. yere of kynge Edward, syr Robert Knolles, with othe of his retenew, with ayde of the kynges men of Nauerne,

warred in Brettayne, and toke many castels and holdes, and many prisoners, and toke great sōmes of money for sauynge of townes, and raunsomes of prisoners.

¶ Also, in the .xxxiiii. yere, kynge Edward, with the prince, his son, and the duke of Lancaster, sayled ouer vnto Caleys, and so went to the contrey of Champayne; to whome dyuers lordes of the duchye of Burgoyne came, and gaue the kynge .xxx.M. l'i. that he shulde do no hurt in that contrey. Wherfore he departed thens, and went towarde Parys; and his hoost lodged nyghē to Parys, redy to gyue battell, but ŷ bysshoppe of Beaux, chauncellour of Normādye, with other, toke a day of truse to conclude a peace; at whiche day, at a place within a myle of Charters, the duke of Lancaster, the erle of Warwyke and Northampton, appered for kynge Edward; and for Charles, than eldyst son to kynge Johā, whiche before was made regent of Fraunce, there appered the sayd bysshoppe of Beaux, and dyuers other lordes, whiche peace was thus concluded: that kynge Edward shulde haue all the landes that he than had in Gascoyn and Guyan, to hym and to his heyres, without doyng for them any homage; and that kynge Edward shulde gyue vp all his tyle ŷ he claymed to the crowne of Fraunce. And also that the Frenche kynge shulde pay for his raunsome .iii. millyons of scutes, whiche amount to .v.C.M. l'i. And also ŷ kynge Edward shulde nat alye hym with the Flemynges, nor ayde them agaynst kynge Johā, nor his heyres, kynges of Fraunce.

The kyng
of Fraūce
raunsomed.

¶ After whiche treatye, thus concluded, kynge Edward returned into Englande; and after, kynge Edward and kynge Johan, at Caleys, were bothe sworne to mayntayne ŷ sayd artycles. And than kynge Johan was delyuered and went into Fraunce, whiche was .iiii. yere after that he was taken. And kynge Edward had Johan, duke of Amon and Mayne, whiche was kynge Johans sonne, and Johan, duke of Aluerne, and .viii. other erles, delyuered hym for hostages; and he with them than returned into Englande.

The cō-
panions.

¶ Also, after this, a companye of dyuers nacyons, called the companyons, assembled them in the contrey of Champayn, wherof ſ captayns were Englysshemen; agaynst whome the Frenche kyng sent .iii. erles to subdewe them, with a great power with them; but the Frenchemen were discomfyt, and one of the erles was slayne, and .ii. of them taken prisoners. And these companye cōtynued .iiii. yeres, to the nombre of .lx.M. And in the same tyme a lyke company assembled in Italye, whiche dyd moche hurt.

Kynge
Johan of
Fraunce
dyed in
London.

Battell in
Brytten.

¶ In the .xxxvii. yere of kynge Edward, kyng Johan of Fraunce came ouer agayne into Englande, of his free wyll, to sporte hym, and had great chere. But the nexte yere after, he fell sycke at the Sauey, and there dyed, and then Charles, his son, was crowned kynge in Parys. And in the same yere, the kynge of Cypres and the kynge of Scottes came into Englande, to speke with kynge Edward. Also, sone after this, prince Edward sayled to Burdeaux, and receyued poscession of Guyan, that his father had newly gyuen hym, and dyd homage therfore to his father. And in ſ same season there was a great battell in Brytteyn, fought betwene Charles de Bloys and syr Johā Momforde, for the tytyle of that dukedome; but, by ſ ayde of Englysshemen, syr Johā Momforde had the victory, and Charles was slayne. And sone after that, Charles, than beyng kynge of Fraunce, toke an order, that the dukedome of Bryttayne shulde remayne to syr Johā Momforde, and his heyres for euer.

¶ Also, about the .xl. yere of kynge Edward, Piers, kynge of Castell, was expulsed, by the ayde of the Frenchemen, by Henry, his bastarde brother. But this Peter, by the ayde of prince Edward, fought with his brother Henry, and put hym to flyght, and slewe .v.M. of his men, and restored Peter to dyuers cityes and holdes whiche he before had lost. But after that, his brother Henry entred into Castell agayne, and in proces wan the contrey agayne, and toke his brother Peter, and beheded hym.

¶ Also, about the .xlii. yere of kynge Edwarde, the erles of Armenake, of Dalbret, and of Perygot, with dyuers other lordes of Guyan, appelled prince Edwarde to Charles, the Frenche kynge, that prince Edwarde had broken y^e peace made betwene the .ii. kinges, kynge Edwarde and kynge Johan; and one great cause that they layde agaynst prince Edwarde was, because he leueyed a fowage in Guyan, agaynst y^e myndes of the lordes, where the contrey ought to be free. Where vpon kynge Charles sent his letters to prince Edwarde, cōmaundyng hym to appere at Parys, to answeare there. Prince Edwarde sōmoned. Wherwith prince Edwarde was nat content, and sayde he wolde nat appere before hym, but with his basenet on his hede, and .lx. men of warre; and sayd he receyued his lande of his father, the kynge of Englande, and yf any mysorder were, it ought to be determyned before his father, in Englande. Whervpon newe debate and varyaunce began betwene these .ii. kynges, that kynge Edwarde sent ouer the duke of Lancaster, whiche landed at Caley with a stronge power, and went to Turney and Ayre, and wasted the contrey, and after went towarde Harflete, in Normandy; and after from thens to the contrey of Poyteou. And the Frenche kynge sent the duke of Burgoyne and the duke of Barre into the sayd contreys, with a great power, whiche toke many holdes, and dyd great displeasure to the Englysshemen there.

¶ Also, about this tyme there was a great pestylence in Englande; and after a great derthe, that whete was worthe .xl.d. a busshell.

¶ Also, after that, syr Robert Knolles, with the lorde Fitzwater and lorde Grauntson, and with a great company of soudyers, entred Saynt Omers, and so to Aras, and so to Parys; and whan they sawe that the Frenchemen wolde gyue them no battell, they returned towarde Normādy, and so to the erledome of Angeo. But than varyance fell betwene syr Robert Knolles and the lorde Fitzwater and lorde Grauntson; wherfore syr Robert Knolles, with the floure of the archers, went into Brytten. And than the Frenche kynge sent the

Battell in
Brytten.

marshall of Fraūce, with a great power, agaynst the lorde Fitzwater and lorde Grauntson, and gaue vnto them a battell, where the Englysshemen were discomfyt, and the lorde Grauntson was there taken, and .iii.C. Englysshemen slayne, and the rest takyn prisoners and put to flyght.

¶ Also, in the .xlv. yere of kynge Edwarde, the Frenche kynge contynued hys warre so sore in Guyan, and many dyuers skyrmysshes were betwene the Frenchemen and the Englysshemen, but most cōmenly alway the Englysshemen were put to the wors, and many holdes and townes were taken from them, for the people of the con-trey fauoured nat the Englysshemen, because of ŷ great taskes that prince Edwarde had gathered there of them, and the citye of Ly-moge, and other cityes rebelled agaynst prince Edwarde. Wherefore prince Edwarde, perceyuyng all this, and what for lacke of money, and what for syckenesse and maladyes that he had, he departed into Englande, leauynge behynde hym the duke of Lancaster, and his brother, the erle of Cambryge, to rule Gascoyn; but sone after that they came into Englande.

Battell in
the see.

¶ Also, in the .xlvi. yere of kynge Edwarde, the kynge sent the erle of Pembroke, with a great companye, to fortifye the towne of Rochell, but he was met in the see with a companye of Spanyardes, betwene whome there was a cruell fyght; but the Englysshemen were discomfyt, and ŷ erle of Pembroke was there taken, with a .C.lx. mo prisoners, and the most parte of his men slayne and drowned, and many Englysshe shyppes taken. And sone after that, the towne of Rochell was yelden to the dukes of Burgoyne and Barry, to the Frenche kynges vse.

¶ Also, in the .xlvii. yere, the duke of Lancaster, syr Johñ Gaunt, and Edmonde of Langley, his brother, landed at Caley with a great power, and so went forth to Dorlons and Corby, and passed the water of Somme and after passed the ryuer of Seyne,

and so vnto Bordeaux, and spoyled the contrey as they went, and were neuer fought with, saue onely at a skyrmysshe they lost .l. speres and .xx. archers, whiche straggled from theyr companye.

¶ Also, in the .xlviij. yere, pope Gregory sent .ii. bysshoppes to intreate for peace betwene the .ii. kynges, but no full peace coude be than concluded; but yet they obteyned an abstynence of warre to a certayne day; and after that they obteyned a longer day of abstynence of warre. But alway in y season the Frenche kyng was many townes and holdes, aswell in Guyan as in Brytten.

¶ Also, in the .l. yere of this kyng, there was suche syckenesse and mortalyte, aswell in Italye as in Englande, that innumerable people dyed.

¶ Also, in the .li. yere of kyng Edward, he called his parlyament at Westmyster, and asked a subsidye of his cōmons for the defence of his enemyes; where vnto it was answered, that they myght no longer bere suche charges; and sayd forther, that they knewe that the kyng had ynoughe if it were well guyded. And forther, they complayned of dyuers offycers, and specially of the lorde Mortymer and dame Alys Piers; wherfore the commons prayed that they myght be remoued from the kyng; whiche request, by the meanes of prince Edward, the kyng graunted; and after that, the commons graunted the kinges pleasure. And sone after, prince Edward dyed at Westmyster, the .viii. day of July, and after was buried at Can-
terburye. Prince Ed-
warde dyed.

¶ In this yere also began a great cisme in the church of Rome; Cisme. for, after y dethe of pope Gregorye, there were chosyn .ii. popes, that harde it was to knowe whiche was indubitat pope, that by many yeres after there was euer .ii. popes.

¶ Also, in the same yere, the .xxi. day of June, the yere of Chryst .M.CCC.lxxvii. kynge Edwardē dyed, and is buryed at Westmyster.

¶ This kynge Edwardē, whan he dyed, had .iiii. sons; that is to say, Leonell, duke of Clarence, Johñ of Gaunt, duke of Lancaster, Edmonde of Langley, duke of Yorke, and Thomas of Wodstoke, erle of Cambryge.

¶ This kynge Edwardē y Thyrde, though that he was occupied all the tyme of his lyfe in warre, yet he was so cyrcumspecte, that he euer toke hede to the cōmen welthe of his realme, and ordred and stablysshed his lawes meruelously well, and had in his dayes .xxv. or .xxvi. parlyamentes, where there were many good statutes and actes made for the commyn welthe of the lande, as appereth in the bokes of his statutes.

Richard III



Richardus.ij.



Rycharde the Seconde.



RICHARDE, the seconde of that name, and son to prince Edward, eldyst son to kyng Edward the .iii. beyng of .xi. yere of age, was crowned kyng of Englande the .xv. day of July, the yere of Chryst .M.CCC.lxxvii. In the .ii. yere of this kynges reyne, certayne galeys and other shippes were sent by Charles, kyng of Fraunce, with a great company; whiche came into dyuers hauyns in Englande, and dyd moche hurte; and, at the last, came into Thames, and so to Grauysende, and brent parte of that towne, and returned into Fraunce agayne. And, in the same yere, the erle of Cambrydge, the kynges vncle, went into Fraunce with .viii.M. men, and passed the water of Sōme, and so forthe to Troys, and wan it, and so passed to the contrey of Gascoyne, and so into Brytteyn, where syr Johā of Mounforde, duke of Brytteyn, gladly receyued them. Anone after this, the cōmons of Englande arose, and specially in Essex and Kent, and made them capteyns, of whome the chefe they called Jacke Strawe, another Wyll Wawe, ^{Jacke} another Wat Tyler, and another Jacke Sheparde, whiche came into ^{Strawe.} the Towre of London, where the kyng was; and there they toke the archebyssshoppe of Caunterbury, the lorde of Saynt Johans, and a frere, the kynges confessour, and at the Towre Hyll smote of theyr hedes, and slewe and robbed all the straungers in Sothewarke, and toke with them all the sentwary men in Westmyster and Saynt Martyns, and brent the Sauey, the duke of Lancasters place, and spoyled Saynt Johans and the innes of court, and brent theyr bokes, and slewe as many men of lawe and questmongers as they coude fynde, and toke out all the prisoners in all the prisons about London; and after brought the kyng out of the Toure, and caused hym to ryde thorowe parte of the citye; and in Smythfilde made a proclamacyon in the kynges presence, with smal reuerence. And thus they con-

Jacke
Strawe
slayne.

tynued saterday and sonday, and vpon the mōday one Willyam Walworthe, mayre of London, disdaynyng Jacke Strawe his pryde and his tyrranye, amonge the multytude and prese of the people in the strete, (aswell of the cōmons of the cite as of other,) came boldely vnto Jacke Strawe, and wonded hym to dethe, and shortely smote of his hede, and set it vpon a speres ende, and cryde ‘Kynge Rycharde, kynge Rycharde.’ And when the rebelles behylde theyr captayns hede, they fled as shepe, and many of them were slayne and taken. Wherefore the kynge afterwarde made the sayd mayre, syr Willyam Walworthe, and .v. other of the aldermen, knyghtes. Also, in the same tyme, the cōmons of Northfolke came to the abbey of Burye, and there slewe one of the kynges justyce, Johā Candysshe, and the prior of the place; but after, the rebelles were taken and put to dethe.

¶ Also, in the .v. yere of this kynge, there was a great erthe quake in Englande, wherof the lyke was neuer sene before. Also, about the same tyme, ŷ bysshoppe of Norwyche went into Flaūders, by the popes lycence, with a great power, and wanne Dunkyrke and Grauelyn, and brent .xl. shyppes and moche goodes, beyng within them. But after, there fell a syckenesse of the flyckes, and other diseases, amonge his soudears, that he was fayne to returne into Englande.

¶ The tytle of Edwarde the .iiii.

¶ In the .vii. yere of this kyng, a great parlyament was holden at Westmyster, where many dukes and erles were made, and Roger Mortymer, son to Edmonde Mortymer and dame Philyppe, eldyst doughter to syr Leonell, seconde son of Edwarde the Thyrde, was proclaymed heyre apparant. Whiche syr Roger went after into Irelande, and there was slayne by the wylde Irysshemen.

¶ This syr Roger Mortymer had issue .ii. sonnes, Edmonde and Roger, and .ii. doughters, Anne and Alys, that was made a nonne.

The .ii. sayd sonnes dyed without issue ; and Anne, the eldyst daughter, was maryed to Rycharde, erle of Cambryge, whiche was son to Edmonde of Langley, before named ; whiche had issue betwene them, Richarde, duke of Yorke, father to kynge Edward the .iiii. as after shalbe shewed.

¶ In the .x. yere of this kynge, the erle of Arondell was sent into Guyan, to strengthe the souldyars there ; but in the se he mette with a flote of Flemynge, laden with Rochell wyne, and set vpon them and toke them. Amonge the whiche was taken the admyrall of Fraunce. Battell in
the see.

¶ In the .xi. yere, Thomas of Wodstocke, than duke of Glocester, y kynges vncle, y erle of Arondell, the erles of Warwyke, Darby, and Notyngham, consyderynge howe the kynge and the lande was ladde, caused a parlyament to be called at London ; and those lordes that knewe them selves fauty fledde out of the lande, and neuer came agayne ; that is to say, Alexander, archebyssshop of Yorke, Leonell Vere, markes of Deuelyn, and syr Myghell Delapole, erle of Suffolke and chauncellour of Englande. And at this parlyament, syr Robert Treuilyan, the chefe justyce of Englande, syr Nicholas Breneber, late mayre of London, syr Johan Salysbury, syr Johan Beuchampe, stewarde of the kynges house, syr Symon Beuerley, syr James Bernet, syr Robert Belknappe, chefe justyce of the cōmon place, and a seriant of armes called Vske, were, by auctoryte of y parlyament, atteynt of treason, and put to execucyon at Tyborne and at the Towre Hyll ; and Johñ Holt, Johñ Loctoñ, Rycharde Gray, Wylliam Burgh, and Robert Fulthorpe, justyce, were exyled the lande for euer. Y kynges
council-
lours at-
teynt of
treason.

¶ In the .xiii. yere of this kynge, Johñ of Gaunt, duke of Lancaster, went into Spayne with a great armye, and claymed to be kynge there, by the tyle of his wyfe, Constaunce, doughter to Peter, late before kynge of Spayne, as is before rehersed ; and, with the helpe of Johan of
Gaunt
wēt into
Spayne.

the kynge of Portyngale, droue Henry, kynge of Spayne, to take a peace and a concorde with hym, whiche was concluded thus: that Henry, kynge of Spayne, shulde mary Constaūce, the eldyst daughter of the duke of Lancaster, that was ryght heyre to Spayne, and that he shulde gyue the duke .viii. charyottes laded with wedges of golde, and yerely to pay to the duke and his wyfe .x.M. markes durynge theyr lyues. After whiche thyng parfyted and done, the duke, with the kynge of Portyngale, departed, and after maryed his other daughter to the sayd kynge of Portyngale.

A ryot in
Fletestrete.

¶ In the .xv. yere of this kynge, a seruant of the bysshoppe of Salysburye, whiche was tresorer of Englande, toke a horselofe from a bakers basket, in Fletestrete; and when the baker ranne to haue recouered his lofe, the bysshoppes seruant brake his hede with his dagger, and the inhabytaunce arose to haue brought this bysshoppes seruant to prison, but his felowes rescued hym; and than the people in a furye wolde haue entryd into the bysshoppes place with force, and the other made stronge resystance; so at the last, the mayre, with dyuers of the aldermen and sheryffes, came thyder with a great companie. But ſ more the people increased, the wors they were to rule, that nat withstandynge the mayres presence they assauted styll the bysshoppes place, that it was longe tyme or they coude be pacefyed; wherof worde came to the bysshop of Salysburye, beyng at Wyndesore with the kynge, that what by the meanes of the bysshoppe of Caunterburye, then chauncellour of Englande, the complaynt was made so greuous to the kynge, that the mayre was discharged of the rule of the citey, and the lybertes seased into the kynges handes, and syr Edward Dalryngryge, knyght, made gouerner of the citey. And the kynge and his coūsell toke suche displeasure with the citey, that the courtes in Westmyster were remoued vnto Yorke, and ſ terme kept there. But then the kynge and his counsell, perceyuyng it was nat so conuenient for the welthe of the realme, it was remoued agayne to London; but yet the kynges displeasure towardes the citey somewhat still continued. Therefore ſ citey made dyuers meanes to ob-

The terme
remoued to
Yorke.

teyne his fauour; and at the last, by meanes of the quene, and specially by one doctor Grauysende, bysshoppe of London, they opteyned the kynges fauour agayne. And after, they receyued the kyng into the citye, where they made many goodly stages and thynges of pleasure; and after, gaue to the kyng a great sōme of money, and many other great gyftes of pleasure; and so at the last obtayned his fauour, and were agayne restored to theyr lybertes by the meanes of the sayde bysshoppe of London.

¶ And in the .xvii. yere, the kynges wyfe, quene Anne, dyed, and is buried at Westmyster.

¶ In the .xviii. yere of kyng Rycharde, the heresydes of Johan Wykelyffe began to sprynge in Englande, and the more because of the cisme of the .ii. popes.

¶ Also, in the .xix. yere, this kyng Rycharde maryed Isabell, doughter to the Frenche kyng, at Caleys, and after brought her into London, with a grēat tryumphe. And also, in the same yere, the towne of Brest was delyuered vnto the duke of Brytteyn. Wherfore the duke of Glocester after that sayd to the kyng, ‘That it had ben more honour to the kyng to put his body to payne to wyne a stronge towne and holde, than to gyue vp y^e whiche was gotten by his progenytours by great diffyculte.’ Whervpon, discencyon fell betwene the kyng and hym. And after that, the duke perceyunge howe the kyng was myslad, by certayne persons, intendyng a re-
 formacyon for the welthe of the realme, caused an assemble to be at Arondell, of dyuers lordes and other; at which assemble there met the sayd duke, the erle of Arondell, the erle of Warwyke, the erle of Notyngham, the bysshoppe of Caunterbury, and dyuers other spirituall lordes, and sware eche to other secretely, to put theyr wylles and powers to auoyde from the kyng the duke of Lancaster and the duke of Yorke, and other whiche mysgouerned the realme. But the erle of Notyngham vttred this conspiracye to the kyng; wherfore the

kynges sodaynly and secretly toke þe duke of Glocester and sent hym to Caleys, where, by his cōmaundement, he was shortly after strangled in his bedde, and so mouldred. And after, the kyng called a parlyament at Westmyster, where the erle of Arondell was judged to dethe, and beheded at the Towre Hyll, and þe erle of Warwyke banysshed into the Ile of Man for euer, and dyuers other persons cōmytted to perpetuall prison; and in this same parlyament all the actes made in the parlyament before the .xi. yere of kyng Rycharde were adnulled. And in the same yere, Johñ of Gaunt, duke of Lancaster dyed.

The arty-
cles whiche
causyd the
peple to
murmur
againste the
kyng.

¶ Also, in the .xxi. yere, the people of the lande greatly murmured and grudged, at the mysorder of the kynges, for dyuers causes; one was, for that he had leuyed many exaccyons and charges of the people, and wasted it, and gyuen it to lyght persons. And also, for because that the duke of Glocester was secretly murdred without proces of the law. And also, for that he wolde chose sheryffes and other offycers at his owne wyll and pleasure, without aduyse of any discrete coūsell. Also another cause was, that he wolde rebuke the judges yf they gaue any iugement contrarye to his mynde; wherfore they gaue many iugementes contrary to the order of the lawe. And also that, before his parlyament, he wolde sende his letters to sheryffes, cityes, and borowes, commaundyng them to chose suche knyghtes of the shyre, and suche citezynes and burgeses, as he hym selfe wolde apoynt and name. And also, for that he cōmaunded the sheriffes of his shyres, and other offycers, to cause the people to make certayne generall othes, and to wrytte and to seale certayne bondes and wrytynges for the performance of the same othes. And also, for þe he caused and compelled many men of great substaunce to seale certayne blanke charters, and after put ī the sōmes, and wrote in them certayne clauses, to the vtter vndoyng of them that sealed them. And also an other rumour ranne vpon the kynges, þe he had set Englande to ferme to .iii. persons; that was, syr Johñ Busshe, syr Johñ Bagot, and syr Henry Grene.

¶ Also, sone after the forsayd parlyament, a great discorde fell betwene the duke of Northfolke, whiche before was erle of Notyng-ham, and Henry Bolingbroke, sonne to Johñ of Gaunt, than duke of Herforde; and the duke of Herforde accused the other that he had taken .iiii.M. markes of the kynges, wherwith he shulde haue waged certayne soudyers, and conuerted it to his owne vse; vpon whiche tryall they shulde haue waged battell. But at the last bothe these dukes were banysshed the lande. And than the duke of Herforde sayled into Fraunce, and there taryed, and the duke of Northfolke went into Venyce, and there dyed.

¶ Also, in the .xxii. yere of this kyng, the kyng, with a great armye, sayled into Irelande, and there conquered the lande, and prospered marueylously, and set the contrey in good order. But than anone tythynges there came to the kyng, that Henry Bolingbroke, duke of Herforde, was landed in Englande, at a place called Rauyns Sporre, in the northe contrey, and proclaymed hymselfe duke of Lancaster; and with that, moche people resorted vnto hym. Wherfore the kyng, in all hast, came ouer into Englande with a small companye, and lasfe moche of his ordynance behynde hym, and came to the castell of Flynt, and there rested hym, to the intent to gather more strength. But, in the meane whyle, the duke was cōmyn vnto Brystowe with a great companye, and there toke syr Willyam Scrope, erle of Wylshyre, syr Johan Busshy, and syr Johñ Grene, whiche .iii. anone had theyr hedes smytten of; and syr Johñ Bagot was taken there the same tyme, but he escaped agayne, and fled into Irelande; but after that he was taken agayne, and brought vnto London, and put into Newgate. Whan the kyng harde of the strength of the duke, the kyng, and all that euer were about hym, feared sore. Wherfore one Thomas Percy, erle of Worcester, stewarde of the kynges house, contrary to his alegeaunce, brake his whyte rodde openly in the kynges hall, and bad euery man shifte for hym selfe. Wherby the kynges seruantes went away, and there the kyng was lasfe comfortles; so that he was shortely after taken, and

The kyng
sayled into
Irelāde.

Henry Bo-
lingbroke
landed.

The kyng
came agayne
into Eng-
lande.

The kyng
taken pri-
soner.

brought to ſ duke, whiche incontynently brought hym to London; and whan he was nyghe the citee, he ſent kyng Rycharde ſecretely to the Towre. And dyuers wylde perſons of the citee herynge thereof, aſſembled a great nombre, to the intent to haue taken kyng Rycharde, and to haue ſlayne hym, or that he had cōmyn to the Towre, for ſ great cruelte that he before tyme had vſed to the citee. But the mayre, and other diſcrete cōmyners herynge of theyr purpoſe, gathered another companye, and by good polecye, but nat without great difficulte, put thoſe wylde felowes from theyr purpoſe. Than anone after, there was a parlyament called at Weſtmyster, where many of the artycles before rehersed were layde to the kynges charge; that he had mysgouerned the realme, and that he was nat worthy therfore to be the prince or gouernour of a realme. Whiche thynges he confeſſed hym ſelfe by his mouthe, and renounced and reſygned vp all his kyngly maieste, and all the tytle and ryght that he had to the crowne, and further released to all lordes ſpirituall and temporall, and to all other of euery degree, all homage and fealte that euer they made or auowed to hym. And than the kyng, by the hole conſent of all the lordes and the cōmons in the ſayd parlyament, was deposed of his kyngly dignyte; and all they, by one aſſent, chaſe the ſayd Henry, duke of Harforde, for the great manhode and wysdome that they ſawe in hym aboue all other, to be kyng of Englande. And thus this kyng Rycharde was deposed, the yere of Chryſt .M.CCC.xCix. the laſt day of Septēbre. And he was fyrſt buried at Langley, but he lyeth nowe at Weſtmyster.



Henricus.iiij.



Henry the .iiii.



HENRY the .iiii. son to Johan of Gaunt, the thyrde son of Edward the .iii. was crowned kynge of Englāde the .xiii. day of October, the yere of Chryst .M.CCC.xC.ix. and immedyatly after, the sayd parlyament contynuyng, all the actes made in the .xxi. yere of Rycharde the .ii. were adnulled; and all the actes made in y parlyament the .xi. yere of king Rycharde, were agayne conformed.

I Also, in the fyrst yere of this kyng, the duke of Awemarle ^{Conspyra-} came and shewed the kynge, than beyng at Wyndesore, that he ^{cye.} and the duke of Surrey, the duke of Excester, and the erle of Salysburye, and the erle of Glocester, and other moo, were accorded to make a mummyng on twelfte day at nyght, and that they purposed to sle the kyng. Wherefore the kynge sodaynly departed and came to London for socour and counsell. Wherefore these lordes, when they knewe they were bewrayed, they fledde, and shortely after they were taken all and beheded, and theyr hedes set vpon London brydge. And in this whyle, Rycharde, late kyng, was remoued from the castell of Ledys, in Kent, and sent vnto Pomefret castell, where, sone after, he was put to dethe. But ^{The dethe of} of the maner of his dethe be dyuers opinyons; for some sayd that ^{kyng Rycharde the} he was famysshed, and kept from mete .v. days; wherefore he dyed for ^{.ii.} hunger; and some sayd that one syr Piers of Exton, with .viii. of his company, fell vpon this Rycharde, late kynge, and slewe hym. But as sone as they smote at hym, he shortely recouered one of theyr axes, and slewe .iiii. of them; but at the last he was wonded to dethe by the handes of the sayd Piers; and when he was deed, he was layde open vysaged in the minyster of Pountfret, and after that brought to the citey of London, and layde agayne in Poules, with

open vysage, to the intent that his dethe myght be openly knowen; and after he was caryed vnto Langley, and there buried. But after he was remoued by kynge Henry the .v. in the fyrst yere of his reyne, and buried in Westmyster.

¶ After the deposynge of this kynge Rycharde, kyng Henry founde great treasour; what in his treasourye and what in other places, in money and iewels, to the value of .vii.M. li'. But yet here ye must note, that .xl.s. in those dayes was better than .xl.s. is at this present day, whiche is now the .xxi. yere of kynge Henry the .viii. for at those dayes .v. grotes made an ounce, and now at this day .xi. grotes maketh an ounce.

¶ Also, in the same yere, the kynge sent Isabell, late quene, and wyfe to kynge Rycharde, into Fraūce, vnto her father, the Frenche kynge, with great ryches, in discharge of all her dowery in Englande; whiche was after maryed to one Charles, son and heyre to the duke of Orlyaunce.

A prior and
.viii. freres
hanged at
Tyborne,
for treason.

¶ Also, in the seconde yere of this kynge, a knyght called Roger Claryngton, and his .ii. seruantes, and the prior of Launde, and .viii. freres, mynours or gray freres, and some of them bachelers of dyuinite, were drawyn and hanged at Tyborne, for treason. In this tyme, a discencyon fell betwene one Owen of Glendor, a Welchman, and the lorde Gray of Ruthyn, whiche Owen toke the lorde Gray prisoner, and compelled hym to marye his doughter, and kept hym styll in Wales tyll he dyed. Wherwith the kynge toke displeasure, and came into Wales with a great power. And Owen, with his people, fled into the mountaynes, and there kept him, that the kynge cowde nat wyne vnto hym, wherfore the kynge returned.

¶ Also, in the .iii. yere of this kynge, a discencyon fell betwene the kynge and syr Thomas Percy, erle of Worcester; that the sayd erle and syr Henry Percy, his neuewe, son and heyre to the erle of

Northūberlande, gaue the kynge a great battell at Shroysbury, where the sayd erle was taken, and syr Henry Percy slayne; and on the kynges parte, Henry, the kynges eldyst son, beyng prince, was wounded, and the erle of Stafforde was slayne; and many other noble men and other were slayne vpon bothe partes; and after, the erle was beheded. And sone after this, the duches of Bryttayne came into Englande, and was maryed vnto the kynge. Sone after this, the emperour of Rome, called Robert, came into Englande, to se the contrey, and to disporte hym, and had great chere of the kynge.

¶ Also, about the .vi. yere of this kynge, Rycharde Skrope, arche-bysshop of Caunterburye, and the lorde Mowbray, marshall of Englande, with other to them alyed, gathered great strength, to the intent to haue put downe the kynge. Wherfore the kynge gathered his power, and sodaynly mette wth them besyde Yorke, where, at a skyrmysshe made betwene them, they were bothe taken. For whiche rebellyon they were there demyd to dethe; and after they were bothe beheded.

¶ Also, in this kynges dayes, and ofte tymes in the tyme of kynge Rycharde the Seconde, there were many chalenged other, and appelled other for treason. For the whiche they waged battell, and he y^e was vanquessed was put to dethe as a traytour, whether he were appellat or defendāt.

¶ Also, about the .ix. yere of this kynge, one Ryse Apdee, a Welcheman, for fauour that he bare to Owen of Glendour, rebelled agayne the kynge; but at the last he was taken and brought vnto London, and there drawne, hanged, and quartred.

¶ Also, sone after that, about the .xii. yere of his reyne, the kynge sent his sonnes, Thomas, duke of Clarence, Johā, duke of Bedforde, and Umfrey, duke of Glocester, and dyuers other lordes, with a great power, into Fraūce, to helpe the duke of Orlyauce

agayne the duke of Burgon ; whiche landed in Normandye, and so forthe went to Burdeaux, and toke many holdes and many prisoners, and after returned with them into Englande.

¶ Also, in the .xiiii. yere of his reyne, kynge Henry intended to take a voyage to visyte the sepulture of our Lorde at Jerusalem; and made newe galeys therfore; because there was a prophecy sayd that he shulde neuer dye tyll he had be at Jerusalem. And in the pre-parynge of this, he fell sodaynly sycke at Saynt Edwardes shryne, at Westmyster; wherfore they bare him into y^e abbottes place there, into a chambre. And whan the kynge was somewhat come to hym selfe, he asked where he was, and his seruantes tolde hym he was in the abbot of Westmysters place, in a chambre called Jerusalem. And whan the kynge harde that the chambre was called Jerusalem, he knewe well y^e he shulde dye; and therfore he made hym redy vnto God, and there shortely after dyed, in the .xx. day of Marche, the yere of Chryst .M.CCCC.xii. and after was brought to Caunterburye, and there buried.



Henricus. v.



Henry the fyfte.



HENRY, the fyfte of that name, and son to Henry the .iiii. was crowned kynge of Englande the .ix. day of August, the yere of Chryst .M.CCCC.xii. He was borne at Monmouthe, in Wales; and therfore he is called kynge Henry of Monmouthe. This Henry, before the dethe of his father, applyed hym selfe to vyce and insolence, and vsed ryotous and wylde companye. But after that he was admytted to gouerne y^e lande, he became a newe man, and turned all his wyldenesse to sobernesse, and his vyces to vertue. And than he gaue sufficyent rewardes to all his olde wylde cōpany that were his familyers, and charged all them, vpon payne of theyr lyues, that they shulde nat come within .x. myles of his presens. And after his coronacyon, he caused the corps of kynge Rycharde the .ii. to be taken vp at Langley, and with great solempnyte buried agayne at Westmyster, and ordayned there .ii. tapers to brenne perpetually vpon his graue, and euery weke a solempne deryge and masse to be songe for hym, and certayne money to be gyuen in almesse.

The king
exyled his
olde wylde
familyers.

Also, in the .ii. yere of his reyne, one syr Johñ Oldecastell, knyght, was appeched of heresye, and taken; and he escaped, and fledde into Wales. But after that, the adherentes of the sayd syr Johñ gathered a great nombre of people, and assembled them in a fylde nyghe Saynt Gylles, nyghe London; but the kynge herynge therof, sodaynly gathered his people and entryd the fylde vpon them or they were fully assembled, and vanquesshed them and toke them prisoners; and after, caused .xxx. and mo of them to be iudged, whiche were hanged vpon galouse in the same fylde, and there brent.

Battel at
Saint Gyles.

Also, in the .iii. yere of this kyng Henry, he was put in mynde,

by his lordes spirituall and temporall, to make warre vpon the Frenche kynge, for the tytle and ryght that he had to Normādy, Gascoyne, and Guyan. Whervpon he sent his imbassadours to the Frenche kynge, Charles the .vi. and also desyred to haue Katheryn, his doughter, in maryage. Whervnto it was answered by the counsell of Fraunce, that they had no leyser to answere suche tryfelinge busynesse. And some wryters affyrme that the Frenche kynge sent kynge Henry worde that he was to yonge to enterpryse any warre, and, in derisyon, sent vnto hym a tonne full of tennes balles, whiche was more mete for hym and his lordes to play with, than to meddyl with any warres. Wherefore the kynge, by the aduyse of his counsell, made quycke prouisyon for to warre, as after shalbe shewed.

¶ Also, in the same yere, there was a generall counsell of all the clargye of Christendome, holdyn in þe citye of Constaunce, in Hyghe Almayne; where the opinyons of Wykelyffe were condempned for heresy. Whiche counsell contynued by the space of .iiii. yeres, and than the olde cisme of the two popes was determyned, and one newe pope chosen, called the .v. Martyn.

The fyrst
voyage into
Fraunce.

Conspira-
cye.

¶ Also, whan the kynge had made prouisyon for his warre, in the .iiii. yere of his reyne, he, with his lordes, rodde thorowe London, and so to Southampton, where his armye went with hym. But whyle he was shyppeinge his people, Rycharde, erle of Chambrydge, sonne to Edward of Langley, the .iiii. son to kynge Edward the .iii. whiche Rycharde maryed Anne, doughter to Roger Mortymer, son to Philyp, onely doughter of Leonell .ii. son to kyng Edward & Thyrde, and syr Rycharde Skrope, tresourer of Englande, and syr Thomas Gray, knyght, conspyred treason agaynst the kynge, and intended to haue slayne the kynge; wherfore these .iii. were taken, and therof areyned of treason, and therefore there beheded. And some wryters affyrme that the Frenche kynge hyered them therto, and for the accomplysshement of this sayd purpose, gaue vnto them a millyon of golde. After whiche execucion thus done, the kynge

toke shyppe with his armye, and landed in Normandy, and leyde sege to the castell of Harflete, whiche anone was delyuered vnto the kynge. And than the kynge put out the Frenchemen, and stuffed it with Englysshemen, and made his vncler, the erle of Dorset, captayne therof; and sent a proclamacyon into Englande, that what crafty man wolde come thither to dwell, he shulde haue house and housholde to hym and to his heyres and his assygnys; whervpon many came thither, and so the towne was stuffed with Englysshemen. Than the dolphyn, and other lordes, that had the gouernaunce of Fraunce, because the Frenche kynge was y tyme sycke and dys-eased, and as some wryters affyrme of a frensy, brake vp all the brydges, that the kynge coude nat passe ouer the water of Some. Wherfore the kynge drewe towarde Pycardye. Wherfore the Frenchemen assembled a great hoost, and came towarde the kynge, to a certayne towne called Egyncourt, redy to gyue battell. And whan kynge Henry sawe the great multytude, he comforted his people, whiche were nat, of good fyghtyngmen, passynge the nombre of .vii.M. But the Frenche cronycles seythe there were almost .xx.M. And the Frenchemen were nombred at .xl.M. And therefore kynge Henry comaunded euery man ouer nyght to gette hym a stake sharpe at bothe endes, and to pytche it into the grounde before them, and to retrete backe in the begynnyng, whan the Frenchemen shulde, with theyr speres, renne vpon them, and, accordynge as they were comaunded they dyd. And in the mornyng in the .xxv. day of October, the Frenchemen, with a great nombre of men of armes with speres, came fersly rennyng vpon the Englysshe hoost, to the intent to haue ouer ryden them; but the horses were goryd with the stakes, and woūded and beten so with arowes, that one stūbled vpon another, that euery Frencheman combryd other, and than the Englysshemen, with theyr bylles and axes so fersly smote them, and slewe them as fast as they might slee a flocke of shepe in a folde, that the victorie that day fell to the Englysshemen. At whiche battell there was slayne, of the Englysshe parte, the duke of Yorke, that had the vawewarde, and the duke of Suffolke, and of other persons

Battell at
Egyncourt.

nat passynge the nombre of .xxx. persons. But of Frenchemen there were slayne the duke of Alaunson, the duke of Braban, and .viii. erles and .lxxx. barons, and of gentylmen of name to the nombre of .xv.C. and aboue; and of other, aboue .viii. or .ix.M. And there was taken the duke of Orlyaunce, the duke of Burbon, the erles of Vandosme, of Ewe, of Rychemount, and Bursygaunt, marshall of Fraunce, and many other gentylmen to the nombre of .xxiiii.C. and aboue. And after this battell and victorie, tydynges came to kynge Henry that the Frenchemen were redy with a great hoost agayne, to gyue a newe battell; wherfore he sette his hoost agayne in array, and commaunded and made proclamacyons that euery man shulde slee his prisoner; by reason of whiche proclamacyon, the dukes and lordes of Fraunce that so were prisoners, by the lycence of the kynge, sent worde to the hoost of Fraunce y they shulde withdrawe them, and so they dyd. Than, on the morowe, the kynge with his prisoners toke his way to Caleys, and anone after came ouer into Englande, with all his prisoners and great rychesse, that he and his hoost had wonne at the sayd fylde of Egyncourt, and was honorably receyued in Lōdon, with great tryumphe. Also, in the same yere, Sigysmounde, emperour of Almayne, came into London, whome the kynge honorably receyued, and made to hym great chere. He laboured to haue had a peace betwene the Frenche kynge and kynge Henry, but that toke none effecte; and than he returned into Almayne, and the kyng accompanied hym to Caleys, where echone departed from other with great gyftes and thankes.

¶ Also, in the .iiii. yere of kynge Henry, the duke of Bedforde and the erle of Marche had a great battell vpon the see, with a flote of Januays, and the Englysshemen had the victorie, and toke .iii. of the greatest of theyr caryckes.

¶ Also, in the .v. yere, the kynge hylde his parlyament at Westmyster, where there was graūted to hym, towarde his warres, a fyftene of the temperalte, and a disme of the spiritualte. And shortely

after, the kynge made prouisyon for his voyage, and, with a great hoost, landed in Normādye. And than tythynges came to y^e kynge that a great nauey of Frenchemen intended to lande in Englande. ^{The seconde voyage into Fraunce.} Wherefore the kynge sent the erle of Marche, the erle of Huntynghon, with other, with his shyppes, to incounter with them; whiche shortly met them in the see; betwene whome was a great fyght, but the Englysshemen had the vycorye, and the vycont of Narbon, which ^{Battel in the see.} was captayne of y^e Frenche flete, was taken. Also, in this whyle, the kynge leyde sege to the towne of Touke, whiche was delyuered vnto hym; and after, he went forward to Cane, and wan it and the castell. And than he seuered his armye into dyuers partes, whiche euer as they went wan dyuers stronge holdes and townes. Also, in this yere, there was a derthe in Englande, that a busshell of whete was worthe .ii.s.

¶ Also, in the .v. yere of kynge Henry, the kyng cōtynuyng his warres, he layde sege vnto y^e citey of Roan, whiche citey because they had no rescue by y^e dolphyn, was gyuen vp to kyng Hēry. But the Frenchemen sayd the losse of that citey was because there was diuisyon amonge the citezys.

¶ Also, sone after that, the kynge went forth on his iourney towarde Fraūce, and subdued many townes and holdes as he went, and somewhat by the ayde and helpe of Philyppe, duke of Burgon, whiche toke parte wth kynge Henry, because Johñ, his father, was slayne by the dolphyns seruantes, in y^e presens of the said dolphyn. Than after this the Frenchemen made meanes for a peace and treatye to be made betwene bothe y^e realmes. ^{Y^e treaty of peace.} Wherefore, by y^e meanes of y^e said duke of Burgon, at Troys, in Chāpayne, y^e kynge maryed Katheryn, doughter to Charles, the Frenche kynge, and a peace was cōcluded wth certayne artycles, that is to say, because the Frenche kynge was visyted with a contynuall syckenesse, as is before sayd, kynge Henry, as regent of Fraūce, shulde haue the hole gouernaunce of the realme of Fraunce, and defence of the same, and specyally to with-

stande and defende the dolphyn, whiche agreed nat to the same peace ; and also, y kynge Charles shulde haue the name to be called kynge of Fraunce duryng his lyfe naturall, and, after his dethe, kynge Henry of Englande to be his heyre, and kynge bothe of Fraūce and of Englande, and that bothe these realmes shulde be vnder one monarchy, with dyuers other artycles for the suraunce of the same peace. After whiche artycles concluded, kynge Henry, w his newe wyfe, dame Katheryn, sped hym vnto Parys, where he was honorably receyued. After this, kynge Henry, with dyuers of the lordes of Fraunce, layde sege to dyuers townes whiche toke the dolphyns parte, and wanne them. And when kynge Henry had thus done moche of his purpose in Fraūce, he toke his leaue of his father, the Frenche kynge, and with the quene, his wyfe, sayled into Englande, and brought her to Westmyster, where she was crowned quene of Englande, and left his brother the duke of Clarence, his depute in Fraunce.

Y thyrde
voyage īto
Fraūce.

Battel in
Fraunce.

¶ Also, in the .viii. yere of this kyng Henry, and after this feest of the quenes coronacyon fenysshed, the kynge made prouisyon for his warre in Fraunce agaynst the dolphyn. And the kynge, thus beyng occupied, the duke of Clarence beyng in Fraūce, was ouercome, and in battell slayne, by a Frenche captayne called Johñ de la Rose, and the erle of Huntynghton and Somerset, with many mo gentylmen of Englande, in Gascoyne taken prisoners.

King Henry
and the
quene set
at a feest in
Parys,
crowned.

¶ Also, in the .x. yere of his reyne, the kyng toke shyppe at Douer, and landed at Caleys, and so went into Fraūce, making warre styll agaynst the dolphyn. And after his departynge, y quene was brought to bedde in Wyndesore, the .vi. day of Decembre, of a sonne, called Henry. And after that, the quene went ouer the see to the kynge, and was honorably receyued of her father and of her mother. And kynge Henry and the quene sat bothe at a great feest in Parys, crowned, whiche had nat be sene before ; and the kynge Charles than kept no estate nor great rule. And anone after that, kynge Henry

fell sycke, at Boys de Vincent, and ordayned there many thynges for his soule, and than there, after that, dyed, the .xxxi. day of August, the yere of Chryst .M.CCCC.xxii. and after was brought ouer into Englande, and buryed at Westmyster.

¶ Also, in the monethe of October nexte folowyng, dyed Charles, the Frenche kynge.

...that the
... ..
... ..

... ..
... ..

... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..

... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..

... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..

... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..

ROBERT DE



Henricus. vi.



Henry the Syxte.



HENRY, the syxte of that name, and son to Henry the Fyfte, beyng of the age of .ix. monethes, was proclaymed kynge of Englande the fyrst day of Septēbre, the yere of Chryste .M.iiii.C.xxii. Also, in the monethe of October nexte, Charles, the Frenche kynge, dyed. And sone after that, the corps of his father, kynge Henry the .v. was brought ouer into Englande, and in the .vi. day of Nouembre, with great solempnyte, buryed at Westmyster. And than, anone after, a parlyament was holden at Westmyster, where, aswell the gouernynge of this yonge kynge as of bothe the realmes, was prouyded for. And than the duke of Glocester, the kynges vncle, was made protector of Englande, and the duke of Bedforde, the kynges other vncle, was made regent of Fraunce.

Also, in the seconde yere of kynge Henry the .vi. the kynge, with the quene, his mother, remoued vnto Westmyster, where than was holden a parlyament; and the yonge kynge was set in his sete in the parlyament chambre, amonge his lordes. And in the same yere the duke of Bedforde, as regent of Fraunce, made stronge warre vpon Charles, the Dolphyn, whiche, of his fauourers, was accompted kynge of Fraunce, and gatte many stronge holdes of hym. But at the last, the sayde Charles sent the duke of Alaūson, wth dyuers other great lordes of Fraunce, with a great armye, whiche mette with the duke of Bedforde, the regent, and his hoost, at Vernoyll, betwene whome there was fought a great battell, but the victorye fell to the Englysshe-
men, for in that fyght was slayne the erles of Turon and Boucam̄, the vycount of Narboñ, and dyuers other men of name, and of the commons .v.M.; and there was taken the duke of Alaūson, the marshall of Fraunce, and dyuers other. This Charles, the dolphyn, whome the

Battell at
Vernoyll.

Frenchemen called kynge Charles the .vii. by some wryters is affirmed to be son to Charles the .vi.; and some affyrme hym to be sonne to the duke of Orlyauunce, borne of the quene, wyfe to Charles the .vi.; and some affyrme hym to be the sayd kynge Charles bastarde sonne, borne of his paramour called Fayre Agnes. And also is lyke that he shulde nat be legittymate son to Charles the .vi. because that that kynge Charles, by the consent of his lordes, wylled the realme of Fraunce to Katheryn, his doughter, wyfe to kynge Henry the .v.

¶ Also, in the .iii. yere of kynge Henry the .vi. the duke of Gloucester, the lorde protectour, whiche had maryed the duches of Holande, sayled ouer thither with his wyfe, and was honorably receyued; but sone after, he returned into Englande, leauynge his wyfe behynde hym; and, after that, she was taken by the duke of Burgoyne, and kept in prison; but yet after she escaped. Wherfore y^e duke of Gloucester sent the lorde Fitzwater ouer, with a great power, into Zelande; but they were there, at theyr landynge, incountred of theyr enemyes, and dryuen backe, and fayne to returne agayne to theyr shyppes, and so into Englande, and preuayled nothyng.

Battell at
Zelande.

¶ Also, in the .v. yere of kynge Henry, the erle of Salisbury, syr Thomas Mountegue, with other lordes, leyde sege to the cite of Orlyauunce, and wanne dyuers holdes nyghe the cite; and, as he stode in a bay wyndowe, one of the cite marked hym, and leuelyd a gonne at hym, and smote the tymbre of y^e wyndowe, whiche tymber brake, and so smote hym vpon the face, wherof he dyed within .iii. dayes after. And this was called by the Englysshemen (*indicium malorum*), for, after his dethe, the Englysshemen lost euer in Fraunce theyr possessions, moche more than they wanne.

Dethe of the
erle of Salis-
bury.

King Hen-
ry crowned
at West-
mist.

¶ Also, in the .viii. yere of kynge Henry, he was crowned at Westmyster; and then, after that, he passed ouer the see into Fraunce.

¶ Also, about this tyme, a mayden called Jane, a poore mannes

doughter in Fraunce, came to Charles, the dolphyn of Fraūce, whome the Frenchemen called kynge Charles the .vii. and said she was sent to hym by God, to helpe to releue the misery of Fraunce. Whervpon they gatte her armour, and accompanied her with knyghtes and soudyars; which went forthe, and gaue many great conflyctes to the Englysshemen, and wanne from them many great townes and holdes; and, as some wryters say, she, by her prouydence, caused the sayd Charles to be crowned kynge of Fraunce, at Reyns; but other wryters say he was neuer crowned tyll after the dethe of the duke of Bedforde. This sayde mayde, called by the Frenchemen Le Pusell de Dieu, or the Mayde of God, put the Englysshemen oft tymes to the wors; but yet, at the last, she, with her cōpanye, at a place called Champanye, came to remoue a sege layde thervnto by y^e duke of Burgon and the Englysshemen, and gaue them battell; in whiche fyght the Frenchemen were discomfyt, and there the sayd mayde was taken by a Burgonyon knyght, and after brought to Roan, where she was, by the Englysshemen, iudged to dethe, and brent.

¶ Also, in the .x. yere of kynge Henry, he was crowned in Parys; and after that he returned into Englande, leauynge the duke of Bedforde, as regent of Fraūce, behynde hym. And about this tyme was a great blasynge sterre sene in Englande.

¶ Also, in the .xii. yere of kynge Henry, the lorde Talbot, with a great cōpanye, went into Fraūce, and dyd moche hurte to the Frenchemen. Also, about this tyme, there were many conflyctes betwene Englysshemen and Frenchemen, in Fraunce and Normandy, and in other contreys, and dyuers holdes beseged. But, about the .xiii. yere of kynge Henry, there was a treatye of peace holdyn at Aras, in Pycardye, for bothe y^e realmes, by the meanes of the pope, whiche sent thyder the cardynall of Saynt Crosse for the same purpose. But that treatye toke none effecte; and, as the Frenche cronycles say, the cause therof was for the obstynacy of the Englysshe-

Philyp,
duke of
Burgon,
forsoke the
Englysshe-
men.

The duke of
Bedford
died.

men. Wherefore Philyppe, duke of Burgon, by meanes of the sayde cardynall, forsoke there the Englysshemens parte, and returned to Charles, the Frenche kyng, whiche gaue vnto hym the countye of Poytewe, and dyuers other lordeshyppes, in recompense of his fathers dethe, whiche was before that slayne. And sone after this, the duke of Bedforde, regent of Fraūce, dyed at Roan, and was there buried; after whose dethe the Englysshemen, by lyttell and lyttell, lost all that they had wonne before.

The
Frenche-
men wan
Parys.

¶ Also, in the .xiiii. yere of kyng Henry, the duke of Barre, accompanied with the Burgonyons, wanne Hareflewe, and after that wanne the towne of Saynt Denyse, and slewe therin aboue .iiii.C. Englysshemen. After this, one Notycia, a knyght of Orlyaunce, came to Parys, and lay at the charterhouse be yonde the ryuer of Sayne, and conferred with certayne citezynes of Parys to betray the citye, and to brynge it out of the Englysshemens possessyon; whiche persons, beyng heddes of the citye, so labored and turned the hartes of the cōmons from the Englysshemen, that sodaynly they arose, and slewe as many of the Englysshemen as they coude fynde, and they that fled and fought by the stretes, the women and other persons cast vpon them stones and hote lycour, so that the Englysshemen were slayne and taken prisoners, and they that fled escaped with great parel. Than the other hoost, that lay at the charterhouse, entred at the gates of Saynt Germaine, Saynt Myghels, and Saynt Jakes, and so came ouer the brydges into the citye and towne at theyr pleasure. And after that, the Englysshemen that were in the towre of Saint Denyse, and other holdes, were fayne to gyue vp the sayd holdes, hauynge theyr lyues, and so departed; and in theyr departure, they were mocked and scorned of the Frenchemen without measure, and the Englysshemen y^e taryed were fayne to gyue fyne and raunsome, and were sworne to the said Charles, takynge vpon hym as Frenche kyng.

¶ Also, in the .xiiii. yere of kynge Henry, Philyppe, the duke of Burgon, with a great multytude of Flemynges, leyde sege at Caleyse,

and contynued his sayd sege .iii. wekes. Wherfore the duke of Glocester protectour of Englande, with .v.C. sayle, came ouer into Caleys, intendynge, within thre days, to haue issued out to haue gyuen battell to the duke and the Flemynges. But whan they of Burgon harde tell of the great power of the protectour, he brake vp his sege and departed, and lefte behynde hym parte of his heuy ordynaunce and vytell, and other thynges that he coude nat conuenienly carye in so shorte tyme. And whan he was gone, the lorde protectour folowed hym into Flaunders by the space of .xii. days, and brent dyuers vyllages, and after returned agayne into Englande. Also, in the same yere, the kynge of Scottes beseged the towne of Rokysborowe, in Scotlāde; but as sone as he harde tell that the Englysshemen were cōmyng thyder to remoue the sege, he departed, leauynge parte of his ordynaunce behynde hym. And the same yere, quene Katheryn, mother to kynge Henry the .vi. dyed.

¶ Also, in the .xvii. yere of this kynge, there was a great derthe in Englande, that a busshell of whete was worthe .iii.s. .iiii.d.

¶ Also, in the same yere, at a counsell at Basyll, pope Eugenyne was deposed, and one Amedeus, duke of Sauoy, was chosen pope. But yet Eugenyne cōtynued in Rome as pope, and Amedeus, called Felyx the .v. contynued his dignyte in other places; so that then arose a great cisme who was indubytat pope. This cisme contynued Cisme. .ix. yeres.

¶ Also, about this tyme, there were many conflyctes, and dyuers holdes and townes in many partes of Fraunce wonne and lost; but most cōmenly euer the Englysshemen had the wors.

¶ Also, in the .xx. yere of kynge Henry, the lorde Talbotte leyde sege to an hauyn towne in Normandy, called Depe; and dyuers Battell at Depe. captayns of Fraunce were sent thyder to remoue the sege, whiche were discomfet. Than the lorde Talbot departed, and lefte the

guydyng of the sege to .ii. of his knyghtes. But, at the last, the dolphyn of Vyenne, called Lewys, came with a great power, and gaue them battell, where the Englysshemen were discomfyt, and the Englysshemen slayne and taken prisoners.

The kynges
maryage
cōcluded.

¶ Also, in this .xx. yere, imbassetours were sent into Guyan, to cōclude a maryage betwene kyng Henry and the erles doughter of Armanake; whiche conclusyon was put backe by meanes of ŷ erle erle of Suffolke, whiche kyndlyd a great grudge betwene ŷ lorde protectour, duke of Glocester, and the sayd erle; for the sayd erle, the nexte yere after, went ouer the see into Fraunce, and there concluded a maryage betwene the kyng and lady Margarete, the kynges doughter of Cicyle; for the whiche maryage, there was promysed to the kyng of Cicyll the duchye of Angeo and ŷ erledome of Mayne. Also, about this tyme, the steple of Poules church, in London, was set on fyre by lyghtnyng.

Quene
Margarete
crowned.

¶ And in the .xxiii. yere of kyng Henry, ŷ said lady Margarete was brought ouer into Englāde, and maryed to the kyng, and, after that, crowned at Westmyster.

The dethe of
the good
duke of
Glocester.

¶ Also, in the .xxv. yere of this kyng, there was a parlyament holden at Saynt Edmondes Burye, where the duke of Glocester, that was the lorde protectour duryng the kynges nonage, was a rested, and .xxxii. of his princypall seruantes a rested, and the other put from hym; and, within .v. or .vi. days after, he was founde deed in his bedde, and no wounde vpon hym. Of his dethe were dyuers seynge; some sayd he dyed for sorowe, and some sayde he was murdered betwene two fetherbeddes, and some sayd he was put in the foundement with a hote spytte. This duke was a great clerke, called the good duke of Glocester, because he gouerned well the kyng duryng his nonenage, and kept honorable housholde, and withstode the delyuere of Angeo and Mayne, and neuer was founde fauty to the kyng nor to the crowne; whose body was after conueyed to

Saynt Albons, and there buried. Wherefore, for the dethe of this duke, all the cōmons of Englāde began to murmur and grudge, and specially agaynst the markes of Suffolke, whiche before was called the erle of Suffolke.

¶ About the .xxvi. yere of this kynge, the cisme of ŷ two popes ceasyd, by the dethe of Eugeny; after whose deth, Nicholas the .v. was chosyn pope, to whome Felyx the .v. receyued his papacy. The cause of the cisme was, for that this Eugeny wolde nat obey the decrees before made in the counsell of Constaunce, nor wolde nat obey to the generall counsell; wherof rose a great contrauersye amonge the clerkes and wryters; for some sayd the generall counsell was aboue ŷ pope, and some sayd the pope was aboue the generall counsell. But, duryng this whyle, the Englysshemen lost dyuers townes and holdes in Fraunce and in Normandy, as fyrst Pontlarge and after Roan, and dyuers other townes and holdes.

¶ Also, in the .xxvii. yere of kynge Henry, the kynge called a parlyament at Westmyster, at the whiche parlyament the duke of Suffolke, whiche was before markes of Suffolke, was a rested and sent to the Towre, to content mennes myndes; but after, the kyng lette hym goo at lyberte. And than the parlyament was adiourned to Leycester, where the sayd duke came with ŷ kynge. But the people were nat therwith content, and the cōmons in the commyn house desyred that all they ŷ were consentynge to the delyuerance of the duchye of Angeo, and erledome of Mayne, myght be ponysshed; wherypon the sayd duke of Suffolke was banysshed for .v. yeres, and the lorde Say a rested, and after put in the Towre. And than the duke of Suffolke departed, and toke shyppyng in Northfolke, to go into Fraunce. But he was met in the see with a shyppe called the Nicholas, of the Towre, and taken; and the captayne toke the duke and brought hym into his owne shyppe, and there judged hym to dethe, and than set hym in the shyppe bote, and there smote of his

hede. And thus began myschefe vpon myschefe, and dethe vpon dethe.

Jacke
Cade.

Battell at
Senoke.

¶ Also, about this tyme, the cōmons rebelled in dyuers places of Englande, and named the capteyns Blewberde and other names, and intended to haue gathered more companye; but anone, y kynges counsell herynge therof, caused them to be taken and put to dethe. But yet, anone after, y cōmons of Kent a rose, and made them a captayne called Jacke Cade; whiche, in a great nōbre, came to Blacke Hethe, and made a proclamacyon, that they came to reforme the iniuries of the people, done by meanes of the kynges yuell counsellours. And the kynge gathered a great people, and came towarde them to gyue them battell; wherof heryng, the captayne, Jacke Cade, drewe backe with his people. And the kyng went to Grenewyche, and lefte parte of his hoost lyenge vpon Blacke Hethe; and sent syr Vmfrey Stafforde and his brother, with many other gentylmen, with a great nombre of people, to folowe them. And than, nyghe Senoke, Jacke Cade, with his people, turned agayne, and gaue them a great battell, and had the victorye; where the sayd syr Vmfrey Stafforde and his brother were bothe slayne, and moche other people of his parte, and the resydue fledde. Whan tydynges came to the kyng and his counsell of this, and harde tell that parte of his hoost wolde take parte with Jacke Cade, the kyng remoued to Kynelworthe, wherfore Jacke Cade, with his people, drewe nere to London, and came in Sothwarke, and after entryd ouer the brydge into the citye, and there made proclamacyon in the kynges name, and that payne of dethe none of his people shulde take no vytell nor other thyng but they payde for it; but Jacke Cade hym selfe was the fyrst that brake it. Also this Jacke Cade toke the sayd lorde Say y than was prisoner in the Towre and smote of his hede, at the standarde in Chepe, wherby he gatte the fauour of the people of the citye, and so contynued .iiii. or .v. dayes in the citye, and in the nyght lay in Sothwarke, and in that whyle he put to dethe other persons whiche fauoured the

lorde Say. But, at the last, Jacke Cade hym selfe went vnto an aldermans house, called Philyppe Malpas, and robbed and spoyled his house, and after went to another mans house, called Gyser, and dyned in his house, and, after dynner, robbed and spoyled his house of all that euer he had ; for whiche two robberyes, the citezynes of London grudgyd meruaylous sore agaynst hym. Wherfore the mayre and the citezynes sent to the lorde Skalyes, and one Mathewe Gough, hauynge y^e rule of the Towre, prayenge them to haue theyr assystence to resyst the captayne, which graūted to them theyr good myndes and helpe. And the nexte day, whan the captayne, Jacke Cade, and his people, wolde haue come ouer the brydge, the ^{Skyrmysshe} mayre and citezynes, with the sayd Mathewe Gough, kept the brydge ; ^{vpon Lon-} ^{don brydge.} but the captayne and the Kentysshemen set so fersly vpon them, that they droue them backe to the drawe brydge, where betwene them was a cruell fyght, and many men of London drowned and slayne, for this skyrmysshe contynued all nyght longe tyll the morowe at .ix. of the clocke ; and, at the last, the Kentysshemen brent the brydge. And after this, the chaūcellour of Englande sent to the captayne a pardon generall, for hym and all his meanye; and than they departed, and went euery man to his owne. And after that, there were proclamacyons made, that who so euer coude take the sayd Jacke Cade, a lyue or deed, shulde haue .M. markes for his labour. Whervpon one Alexander Eden, a gentylman of Kent, toke hym in a gar-dayne ; in which takynge the sayd Jacke Cade was slayne. And after ^{Jacke Cade} that, the kynge came into Kent, and caused his justyces to sytte vpon ^{slayn.} this ryot, where many of them, aswell in Kent as in Sussex, were therfore put to dethe. And also, in the same yere, the cōmons in the west contrey arose, and slewe the bysshoppe of Salysbury ; wherfore the kynge went thyther and punysshed those doers.

¶ Also, in the .xxix. yere, there was a parlyament at Westmyster, where the duke of Somercet, that was lately come out of Normandy, and had there lost the citye of Roan, and all that contrey, was put vnder a rest, for he and the quenes cōsell therfore were had in great

hatered; and the duke of Yorke, and other to hym alyed, toke parte agayne the quene and her coūsell, so that mortall warre therof insued.

¶ Also, in the .xxx. yere of this kynge Henry, the kynge and the duke of Somercet, with many other lordes, went to the marches of Wales; and the duke of Yorke, assysted with dyuers lordes and men of name, gathered a great strengthe of people, to the intent to refourme certayne nunryes, and also to haue justyce vpon the duke of Somercet. And certayne lordes beyng about y^e kynge, and with his people, came into a place in Kent, called Brent-hethe. And the kyng, with a great hoost, came into Blacke-hethe. But, by mediacyon of certayne bysshoppes and lordes, a poyntement was taken that the duke of Somercet shulde be cōmytted to warde, there to answeere certayne artycles that the duke of Yorke wolde lay to his charge; the whiche the kynge promysed to do; whervpon the duke of Yorke brake vp his fylde, and came to the kynges tent, where, contrary to the kynges promyse, he sawe the duke of Somercet chefe about the kynge; and, by his counsell, the kynge commaunded the duke of Yorke to ryde before hym into Lōdon, holdyng him in maner as prisoner, and shulde haue ben more strayer kept, but y^e tydynges came that Edward, the duke of Yorke, his eldyst son, and erle of Marche, was cōmyng with a great power of Welchemen, whiche feared so the kynge, the quene, and the other about the kynge, that the duke of Yorke was set at lyberte. And about this tyme, the towne of Harflete, in Normandy, was wonne agayne by Frenchemen, and the towne of Bayons gyuen vp by appoyntement. Also, about this tyme was the quene delyuered of a son called Edward.

¶ Also, about this tyme, the cite of Constantynople, with all the hole empyre, was wonne by y^e Turkes, to the great losse of Chrysten-dome, and the increase of Macomyttes lawe.

¶ Also, in the .xxxiii. yere of this kynge, one Johan Norman,

mayre of London, went to Westmyster by barge, to take his othe, whiche before that tyme were euer wont to ryde be lande; for whiche the watermen made a songe to his great prayse, whiche began, 'Rowe thy bote, Norman.'

¶ Also, in the .xxxii. yere of this kynge, the kynge, by the counsell of the quene and other, cōtrarye to the kynges promyse, put the sayd duke of Somercet at his lyberte, and made hym captayne of Caleys; and he ruled the kynge, and all his realme, as he lyst. Wherefore the great lordes of the realme, and the cōmons, were nat pleased, for the cōmons had sustayned many greuous imposicyon and charges. Wherefore the duke of Yorke, beyng in the marches of Wales, called to hym the erles of Warwyke and of Salysbury, and many other knyghtes and gentylmen, and, with a great people, came towarde London. And the kynge gathered a great hoost, and came out of London to Saynt Albons; where bothe the hoostes came, one hoostlyenge in one ende of the towne, and the other in the other ende; where, in the begynnyng, a meanes of a treatye, or peace, was cōmoned. But, in the tyme of the intreatye, the erle of Warwyke, with his marche men, entryd the towne, and fought agaynste the kynges people, and so began the battell, whiche contynued a longe season; but, in conclusyon, the duke of Yorke and the erle of Warwyke, and that parte had the victorie; and there was slayne, ŷ duke of Somercet, the erle of Northūberlande, the lorde Clyfforde, with many other honorable knyghtes and squyers; and they toke the kynge prisoner, and cōueyed hym into London. And there vpon there was called a parlyament; at the whiche parlyament, because the kynge was called a good, innocent, vertuous man, nat mete for ŷ warres, the duke of Yorke was made protectour, the erle of Salysbury chaunceler of Englande, and the erle of Warwyke captayne of Caleys; and all suche persons as ruled before, as the quene and her counsell, were clerely amoued, concernynge the rule of the kynge and of the lande. But this contynued but a whyle.

The fyrst
battel at
Saynt Al-
bons.

The duke
of Yorke
made pro-
tectour.

¶ Also, about this tyme, a mercers seruant, in London, smote an Italyon; wherfore he was cōmytted to warde. Wherfore all the mercers seruantes gathered them to gether, and compelled ſ mayre to delyuer hym. And after, a meanye of rascall and euyll disposed people, brake certayne straungers houses, and robbed and spoyled them. But after, this matter was inquired of, and thre persons put to execucyon therfore.

¶ Also, in the .xxxiii. yere of kynge Henry, the quene disdayned sore that the duke of Yorke shulde bere the name of protectour, whiche argued and the kynge shulde nat be sufficyent to gouerne the realme, whiche she thought to be a great dishonour to the kynge. Wherfore she gette the fauour of dyuers lordes; and, at a counsell at Grenewyche, she caused the duke of Yorke to be discharged of his protectourshyp, and the erle of Salysbury of his chauncellourshyp; whiche was ſ cause of a newe greater warre. But sone after that, the quene suspected the cite of London to owe fauour to the duke of Yorke, caused the kynge to go into Couentre, where the quene caused the duke of Yorke, the erle of Salysbury, and the erle of Warwyke, to be sent for by priuey seale; but they had secret warnynge, and escaped; and the duke and the erle of Salysburye went into the northe, and the erle of Warwyke, with his wyfe, and with a great companye, went into Caleys, and toke possessyon of his offyce.

¶ Also, in the .xxxv. yere of kynge Henry, there were .iiii. wonderfull fysshes taken at Eyrythe, and .ii. of them were whalles, and one was a swyrde fysshe, and the other was called mors maryn; whiche, as dyuers men sayd, was a pronosticacyon of warre and troble.

Skyrmysshe
in the north
cōtrey.

¶ Also, in the same tyme, was a great skyrmysshe betwene the lorde Egremonde and the sonnes of the erle of Salysburye; but, at the ende, the lorde Egremonde was taken, and after, by iugement of

the kynges counsell, condempned to pay great sōmes of money to the erle of Salysburye, for payment wherof he was cōmytted to Newgate, whiche after brake the prison there, and toke out dyuers prisoners with hym.

¶ Also, in this same tyme, the crafte of printynge of bokes began in the cite of Almayne, named Magonce, whiche is nowe meruaylously increasyd, whiche hathe ben cause of great lernynge and knowelege, and hathe ben the cause of many thynges and great chaunges, and is lyke to be the cause of many straūge thynges here after to come. And, in this same yere, the senesshall of Normandye, with a great nauey, entred the see, and came to Sandewyche, and there robbed and spoyled the towne, and toke with hym many ryche prisoners.

The crafte
of printyng
fyrst
founde.

¶ Also, in this yere, Raynolde Pecoke, bysshop of Chechester, was, at Lambeth, abiured for an heretyke, and his bokes brent, and he kept in prison terme of his lyfe.

¶ Also, in the .xxxvi. yere of kynge Henry, for to appeace the rancour betwene the quene and the lordes, a day of metynge was appoynted by the kynge at London, where, aswell all the lordes that toke the quenes parte, as the duke of Yorke and the erle of Salysburye, and other that toke theyr parte, and also the erle of Warwyke that than came fro Caleys, euery one of them, with a great company, came and assembled, where a dissymulynge concorde was taken betwene them. And after that, the kynge, the quene, and all the lordes, vpon our Lady-day, the Annunciacyon, went a precessyon in Poules. And after that, euery lorde departed at his pleasure.

A dissem-
blynge
peace.

¶ Also, sone after that, certayne shyppes belongynge to the erle of Warwyke, mette with a flote of Spanyardes vpon the see, where betwene them was a cruell fyght, but the Englysshemen had the vic-

Battel in
the see.

torye, and toke .vi. of theyr shyppes, and drowncd and chased .xxvi. but nat without losse of men, for they were moo than an .C. Englysshe-men slayne, and many wounded and hurte.

Also, in the .xxxvi. yere of kynge Henry, the kynge, the quene, and many lordes, beyng at Westmyster, at counsell, because y one of the erle of Warwykes seruantes had hurte one of the kynges seruantes, and escaped; therfore the kynges housholde seruantes came out of the kechyn with spyttes and other wepyns, and wolde haue slayne the erle of Warwyke, as he came to haue taken his barge, so that he escaped with great daunger, and rowed to London. Wherfore the quene wolde haue had the erle a rested, but sodaynly he departed from London, and went to Warwyke. And, after that, he gate a cōmyssion and sayled vnto Caleys. Than the quene malygned agaynst the erle of Salysburye, and caused the lorde Audeley, with a great companye, to mete with the erle commynge towarde Lōdon, to haue taken hym prisoner; but the erle kepyng his wey with a great companye with hym, mette with them at a place called Blore-hethe, where betwene them was a great byckerynge and a sore fyght, but the erle had the victorye. And there the lorde Audeley was slayne and moche of his people, and the erles .ii. sonnes sore wounded, whiche shortely after, as they were goynge homewarde, were taken prisoners by them of the quenes partye, and sent vnto Chester. Whan this was knowen by the duke of Yorke, and the other lordes, they by one assent gathered a stronge hoost of marche men and other, and the erle of Warwyke, with a great companye came from Caleys, and accōpanyed with the duke nyghe the towne of Lodlowe, where they pyght a stronge felde; and the kynge, with a great hoost, came towarde them. But one Andrewe Trolloppe, whiche came with the erle of Warwyke, and many other of the souldyers of Caleys, departed from the dukes hoost, and came to the kynge; wherby the duke and his companyc were sore abashed. Wherfore they concluded to flee, and to leaue the felde standynge as they had ben present; and than

Battel at
Blore-hethe.

the duke departed with his .ii. sonnes, and went fyrst into Wales, and after into Irelande; and the erles of Salysburye, of Marche, and of Warwyke, went into Deuynshyre, and there, by the meanes of one Johñ Denham, a squyer, gette a shyppe, and sayled into Gernesey, and after from thens vnto Caleys, and there ioyously were receyued at a posterne gate. And whan the fyrst departure of these lordes was knowen to the kynge and other lordes of the other parte, they sent about all the coste of Englande to haue stopped them, but it was to late. And than incontynent the kynge dispoyled the towne of Lodlowe and the castell, and toke the duches of Yorke. And anone after, the kynge made the duke of Somercetes son (that was slayne) captayne of Caleys; wherfore he, in all hast, went ouer to haue taken Caleys, but ŷ sayd other erles, beyng there before, kept hym out. Wherfore the yonge duke went and toke Guynes; and than dayly many great assautes were made betwene them of Caleys and them of Guynes; and many men resorted dayly, and came out of Englande, to Caleys, to the socour of the lordes there; and because they lacked money, they shyfted with the staple of Caleys for .xviii. thousande pounce.

And after, they sende ouer the sayd mayster Johñ Denham, with a compaignie of shippes, to Sandewyche, to wynne the kynges nauey ^{The kynges nauey takē at Sandewyche.} there lyenge, whiche so spedde hym that he toke there the towne, and toke the lorde Ryuers in his bedde, and toke the lorde Skalys, and toke as many shippes of the kynges nauey as he lyst, and with them returned into Caleys, but nat without the consent of many of the mayners whiche faouored the erle of Warwyke. Sone after this, the hynge called a parlyament at Couentrye, where the sayd duke of Yorke, with all the other lordes were attaynted of treason, and theyr landes and goodes seasyd to the kynges vse, and prouisyon made ŷ no man shulde passe ouer the see vnto Caleys; but that nat withstādyng, comfort came to them of Caleys dayly out of Englande. And, at the last, the sayd erle of Salysburye, with the other lordes,

Battel at
Northap-
ton.

and with a great companye, landed at Douer, in Kent, and so kept theyr weys towarde the kynge, whiche lay than at Couentre gatherynge his people. And so in conclusyon, whan bothe the hoostes were gathered to a great nombre, at the last they mette at Northampton, where betwene them was fought a cruell battell, where the erle of Salysburye and his cōpanye had the victorie; and there was slayne the duke of Buckyngham, the erle of Shroysburye, the vycount of Beamount, the lorde Egremount, with many other knyghtes and squyers, and the kynge taken prisoner. After whiche felde, they brought the kyng with them into London, there kepyng his estate, and sent shortely worde to the duke of Yorke into Irelande, and immedyatly called a parlyament at Westmyster, to the whiche parlyament the duke of Yorke came, and lodged hym selfe in the kynges palese, where the kynge hym selfe was. Than a great rumour sprange that kynge Henry shulde be deposed, and the duke of Yorke made kynge. And, vpon this parlyament contynuyng, the duke of Yorke came boldely vpon a day in the parlyament chambre, and there set hym downe in the kynges sete, and there made his clayme vnto ſ crowne; wherby many of the lordes were dismayde; for dyuers of the lordes, aswell the dukes fryndes as other, were in the mynde that kynge Henry shulde be kynge duryng his lyfe. For the whiche many great counsels were kept. And in this whyle the quene with suche lordes as were of her parte, were in the northe contrey, and assembled great strength of people. At the last it was concluded at this parlyament, that kynge Henry shulde contynue and reyne as kynge duryng his lyfe naturall, and, after his dethe, the duke of Yorke and his heyres to be kynges; and, yf kynge Henry were disposed to resygne his crowne, that he shulde resygne it to the duke of Yorke and his heyres, w̄ dyuers other artycles.

The duke of
Yorke made
heyre appar-
rant.

¶ And also, that if kynge Henry, duryng his lyfe, went from this appoyntement, or from any other artycle therin, that than he shulde be deposed, and than the duke of Yorke, or his heyre, to take the

crowne, and be kynge. And there the duke of Yorke was made agayne protectour and gouernour of the lande, and was proclaymed heyre apparant to the crowne of Englande.

¶ And also than it was there concluded that, because the quene, and Edward her sonne, and the yonge duke of Somercet, and the duke of Excester, and other, wolde nat come to London, that the duke of Yorke and the erle of Salysbury, with a great power, shulde goo and fatche the quene, and the other lordes. And whan the quene, with her lordes, harde tell of theyr cōmynge, they gathered to them a great strength of people, and mette with them nere vnto a towne called Wakefylde, where betwene them was fought a cruell and a great mortall battell, where the quene and her lordes had the victorye. Battel at Wakefylde. And there was slayne the sayd duke of Yorke, with his son, the duke of Rutlande, and syr Thomas Neuell, son to the erle of Salysburye, and dyuers other, and the erle of Salysburye taken prisoner, whiche, w many other prisoners, were sent vnto Powmefret; whiche erle was after there beheded, and dyuers other, and theyr heades sent vnto Yorke.

¶ Also, in this tyme, Edward, the erle of Marche, eldyst son to y duke of Yorke, beyng at Shroysburye, herynge of the dethe of his father, gathered some people there, and went into Wales to gether mo people, to auenge his fathers dethe; with whome the erles of Penbroke and Wylshyre met, and gaue hym a sharpe skyrmysshe, but the erle of Marche had the victorye. After that, the quene, with her lordes, and with a great cōpanye of northermen, came towarde London, as farre as Saynt Albons. In whiche meane tyme, the duke of Norfolke and the erle of Warwyke, which were assygned to wayte vpon the kynge, gathered vnto them a great strength, and mette with the quenes hoost at Saynt Albons, where betwene them was a stronge Y^e secōde battel at Saint Albons. fyght; where y quenes parte had the victorye, and the duke of Norfolke and the sayd erle were discomfyt and fayne to flee; and kynge Henry was there taken in the fylde, and brought vnto the quene; and

dyuers that were taken prisoners, as the lorde Boneuyll, syr Thomas Tyrell, were beheded. And than dyuers aldermen and cōmons of London went to the quene, and made request that the northernmen myght be turned whome, for feare of robbynge of the citye.

¶ Sone after this, Edward, the erle of Marche, and eldyst son to the duke of Yorke, and the erle of Warwyke, met together at Cotyswolde, and had gathered a great people. And than ſ kyng and the quene, with theyr hoost, returned northewarde. And than the forsayd erle of Marche, with the erle of Warwyke, with dyuers other lordes of theyr partye, came vnto London; to whome resorted the more partye of all the gentylmen of the South and Eest parte of Englāde. At theyr whiche fyrst cōmyng to London, there was a great counsell called of lordes spirituall and temporall, where, after many argumentes and reasons made, it was concluded that, for asmoche as kyng Henry, contrarye to his honour and promyse, had broken the artycles made at that parlyament, and was departed northewarde with the quene and other lordes. And also for so moche as he was thought vnable to gouerne the realme, he was than, by all theyr assentes, deposed and discharged of all kyngly honour and dignyte. And than, by the auctoryte of the sayd counsell, and agrement of all the cōmons there present, Edward, erle of Marche, than the eldyst son of ſ duke of Yorke, was elected and chosen for kyng of Englande. After whiche admyssion, the sayd Edward, erle of Marche, the .iiii. day of Marche, the yere of Chryst .M.CCCC.lx. accompanied with all the lordes, and a great multytude of the cōmons, was brought into Westmyster, and there toke possessyon of the realme. And syttyng in the seate royall, in the great hall of Westmyster, with his septer in his hande, a questyon was axed of all the people, yf they wolde admytte hym to cōtynue as kyng, to the whiche, with one voyce, all the people cryed there Ye. And than there, after the custome vsed, he toke his othe; and, after that, went into the abbey, and there was receyued wth precessyon, and conueyed vnto Saynt Edwardes shryne, and there offered as kyng; and after that

receyued homage and fealte of all the lordes. And vpon the morowe folowyng, he was proclaymed, in dyuers places of the citye of London, Edward the .iiii. than kynge of Englande. Sone after this, this kynge Edward, with his lordes, and a great companye and bande of men, toke his iourney northwarde, to subdue his enemyes, and met wth them at a place called Towton, .ix. myles from Yorke; with whome he had than a cruell and mortall battell; but kynge Edward had the victorye, that in the fylde and chase there were slayne aboue .xxx.M. men. There was slayne the erle of Northumberlande, the erle of Westmyrlande, the lorde Clyfforde, the lorde Egremounde, Andrewe Trollope, and many other. And in the same fylde was taken the erle of Deuonshyre, the erle of Wylkeshyre; whiche erle of Deuonshyre was after at Yorke beheded. But kynge Henry and the quene, the yonge duke of Somercet, the lorde Rose, and other, beyng than at Yorke, heryng of the losse of this fylde, fled towarde Scotlande, and, vpon the morowe folowyng, kynge Edward entered into Yorke with his people, and there hylde his estate. And after that, he left the erle of Warwyke in the northe, to see the guydyng therof, and he hym selfe costed the contrey Southwarde and Eestwarde, and so came towarde London.

Kynge Ed.
warde pro-
claymed
kynge.

Battel at
Towton.

The first thing I noticed when I stepped out of the car was the cold. It was a sharp contrast to the warm blanket I had been sitting under. I looked up at the sky, which was a pale, hazy blue. The air was crisp and clean, a welcome change from the stuffy interior of the car. I took a deep breath, feeling the cool air fill my lungs. The sun was just beginning to rise, casting a soft, golden glow over the landscape. The trees were bare, their branches reaching out like skeletal fingers against the sky. The ground was covered in a thin layer of frost, glistening in the early morning light. I walked slowly, my boots crunching on the ice. The silence was profound, broken only by the occasional rustle of leaves or the distant call of a bird. I felt a sense of peace and solitude, a moment of quiet reflection in the midst of a new day.



Edwardus iii.



Edwarde the .iiii.



EDWARDE the .iiii. son to Rycharde, duke of Yorke, came to London, and there was crowned kynge at Westmyster, the .viii. day of June, the yere of Chryst .M.CCCC.lx. In the fyrst yere of his reyne, the erle of Oxforde, ⁊ lorde Aubrey, syr Thomas Todenham, Willyam Tyrell, and Johñ Mongumery, were beheded at the Towre Hyll. Also, in the same yere, Margarete, late quene of Englande, came out of Fraunce into Scotlande, and from thens into Englande, with a strength of Frenchemen and Scottes. Wherefore kynge Edwarde went towarde them w̄ a stronge hoost; and than the quene, perceyuyng she was nat able to resyst kynge Edwardes power, returned and toke the see, and so went agayne into Scotlande. And after that, the yonge duke of Somercet, and other that toke the quenes parte, submytted them to the kynges grace.

¶ Also, in the .ii. yere of kynge Edwarde, the duke of Somercet, herynge ⁊ Henry, late kynge, was cōmyng agayne into Englande, forsoke kynge Edwardes parte, and returned vnto Henry, late kynge, whiche entered agayne; and at a place called Exham in the Northe, the lorde Johñ Montegue, hauynge the rule of the northe contrey, ^{Battel at Exham.} with a great power to hym gathered, met with thē, and skyrmysshed with them, and had the victorye; where the sayd duke of Somercet, the lorde Hungerforde, the lorde Roose, were taken prisoners, whiche .iii. lordes were sone after put to dethe and beheded, and dyuers other that were there taken were after put to dethe.

¶ Also, in the .iiii. yere of kinge Edwarde, secretely in a mornyng, ^{Kyng Edward maryed.} at Grastcon, nyghe to Stony Stretforde, the kynge maryed Elysabeth, whiche was late before wyfe to syr Johñ Gray, knyght, and doughter

to the lorde Ryuers; where with the erle of Warwyke was nat content, but secretely in his mynde grudged there at. Also, in this yere, Henry, late kyng, was taken in a woode, in the northe contrey, by one Cauntlowe, and presented to kyng Edward, whiche sent him as prisoner to the Towre of London. And, anone after, quene Elysabeth was crowned at Westmyster, with a great solempnyte; and, sone after, she was delyuered of her fyrst chylde, called Elysabeth.

¶ Also, in the .vi. yere of this kyng, the bastarde of Burgon chalenged the lorde Scalys for certayne feates of warre, whiche were done in Smythfylde; but the lorde Scalys had the victory and honour.

¶ Also, in the .viii. yere of this kyng, Margarete, the kynges suster, was sent ouer the see, and honorably maryed to Charles, the duke of Burgon.

¶ Also, in the .ix. yere of kyng Edward, the erle of Warwyke absented hym selfe from the kyng, and confetered vnto hym the duke of Clarence, the kynges brother, whiche before had maryed y^e erle of Warwykes doughter. Whervpon the cōmons of Northumberlande began to rebelle, and chase them a captayne, called Robyn of Ryddysdale, and dyd many great feates. But, at the last, this Robyn of Ryddysdale bare hym selfe so wysely that he and all his companye were pardoned, and had no hurte. But, duryng that rumour and sterynge, the Lyncolnshyre men toke the lorde Ryuers and syr Johā, his son, at the Mewys, at Charynge Crosse, and brought them to Northampton, and there beheded them. And anone after, proclamacyons were made in London, y^e the kyng had pardoned all those ryottours, aswell for the dethe of the lorde Ryuers as for all other displeasures.

Lorde Ry-
uers taken
and behed-
ed.

¶ But, sone after this, a newe styrrynge began in Lyncolneshyre, by meanes of the lorde Welles; for whome the kyng sent by feare

meanes, and, as it was sayd, promysed hym to come safe and goo safe. But, whether the kinge made to hym any suche promyse or nat, yet he was shortely after beheded. And also, sone after this, a ^{The lorde Welles beheded.} concorde and vnyte was labored betwene kynge Edwarde and his brother, the duke of Clarence, and the erle of Warwyke; wherfore they met all at London, at Baynardes castell, where the duchesse of Yorke, theyr mother, than lay. But anone after, y^e erle of Warwyke sodaynly departed to Warwyke, and there gathered a great strength. And in this whyle, syr Robert Welles, son to y^e lorde Welles, before put to dethe, assembled a great power, purposynge to gyue kynge Edwarde battell; and than the kyng sent to hym to come to hym, and he shulde haue his pardon; but he sent answere to kynge Edwarde, that he trusted nat his promyse, but thought he wolde deale with hym as he dyd with his father. But at the last, whan kyng Edwarde, with his power, drewe nere to hym, this Robert Welles fled; but anone after that he was taken, and with hym one syr Thomas Dynmoke, whiche shortely after were bothe put to dethe. Also, about this tyme there arose a great varyaunce betwene northernemen and the Welchemen, to the whiche Welchemen the lorde Harforde was captayne; whiche mette to gether at a place called Egecot, besyde ^{Battel at Egecot.} Banberye, where betwene thē was fought a great battell; where the northynmen had the victorie; where the lorde Harbarde was slayne, with many great gentylmen of Wales. Also, in this season, the duke of Clarence departed from kyng Edwarde and went to the erle of Warwyke, and toke his parte. But the sayd duke and erle, perceyunge theyr lacke of power agaynst kynge Edwarde, toke the see, and sayled into Fraūce, to Lewys, the Frenche kynge, where quene Margaret that tyme was, to whome the Frenche kynge promysed helpe ^{Duke of Clarence and the erle of Warwyk fled ouer the see.} and ayde. And whan these lordes were thus departed into Fraunce, kynge Edwarde caused them to be proclaymed as traytours. And, in this meane whyle, a newe styrrynge began in the northe contrey, by the lorde Fitzhughe; wherfore kyng Edwarde sped hym thyderwarde, (wherof herynge) the sayd lorde Fitzhughe departed into Scotlande.

The duke
of Clarence
lāded.

Kyng Ed-
warde fled
ouer the
see.

Kinge Hery
again pro-
claymed
kīge.

¶ Also, in the .x. yere of kyng Edward, the forsayd duke of Clarence, with the erles of Warwyke, of Penbroke, and Oxforde, and with many other gentylmen, landed at Dertmouthe, in Deuonshyre, and made proclamacyons in kyng Henryes name, where the cōmons of ÿ contrey drewe vnto them in great nombre. And than the Kentysshemen waxed wylde, and came to Ratlyffe and Saynt Kathernes, nyghe Lōdon, and robbed and spoyled the Flemynges, and dyd great hurt. And than the sayd lordes, holdyng theyr way towardes kyng Edward, whiche than was in ÿ northe contrey, and hauynge with hym but small strength, wherof some were nat to hym very trusty, toke a secret companye with hym, and passed ouer the Wasshe in Lyncolneshyre, with great daunger, and nat without losse of dyuers of his companye; and after passed ouer into Flaunders, and came to Charles, his brother in lawe, than duke of Burgon. And whan quene Elysabeth, beyng in the Towre, harde therof, she went into Westmyster, and there regystarde her selfe as a sentwary woman; and so dyd many of kyng Edwardes fryndes. Also these sayd lordes, herynge of kyng Edwardes departynge, sped them vnto London, and, the day of October, they toke kyng Henry out of the Towre, and lodgyd hym in the bysshoppes paleyse, at Poules; and so he was than agayne admytted and proclaymed for kyng thorowe out the hole lande; and, from the sayd day of October, all wrytynges and recordes were made and dated thus, ‘Anno ab incarnatione regni regis Henrici Sexti, quadragesimo nono, et anno readoptionis sui regii magestatis primo:’ that is to say, the yere from the begynnyng of the reyne of kyng Henry the .vi. the .xlxi. and the fyrst yere of the readopcyon of his royall estate. Also, in the begynnyng of this readopcyon, the erle of Worcester, whiche, for his crueltye, was called the bocher of Englande, was taken and arayned at Westmyster, and atteynt of treason, and afterwarde, at the Towre Hyll, beheded.

¶ Also, in this sayd fyrst yere of the readopcyon, quene Elysabeth, beyng at Westmyster, was delyuered of a yonge prince, called Edward.

¶ Also, in the .xxvi. day of Nouembre, there was a parlyament ^{Kynge Ed-} called at Westynster, where kyng Edward was proclaymed vsurper ^{warde and the duke of} of the crowne, and the duke of Glocester, his brother, traytour, and ^{Glocester} bothe atteynted by the auctoryte of the sayd parlyament. The erle ^{attaynted as} of Warwyke than rode thorowe London, and so to Douer, for to haue receyued quene Marget, cōmyng out of Fraūce; but the wynde was so contrary, that she lay at the see syde from Nouembre to Aprell, and coude haue no passage; wherfore the erle of Warwyke was fayne to returne without hauynge of his purpose. But than, in the begynnynge of Aprell, kynge Edward landed in the northe contrey, at ^{Kyng Ed-} a place called Rauyn sporre, with a small cōpany of Flemynge ^{warde lād-} and other, whiche in all had nat past a .M. men, and came towarde ^{ed.} Yorke, makynge his proclamacyons in the name of kynge Henry; and sayd he came for no other intent but to clayme his inherytaunce of the dukedome of Yorke; and so passed tyll he came to Yorke. Wherfore he was there refresshed for a season, and after departed towarde London, and, by fayre wordes, passed the daunger of the lorde markes Mountegue, whiche lay in ŷ cooste with moche people, double to the nombre of kyng Edwardes men. And whan he was thus escaped the power of ŷ sayd markes, and sawe howe that his strength increased, and that the people dayly drewe to hym, he than proclaymed hym selfe kinge of Englande, and so hylde his way tyll he came to London. And, vpon Shere Thursday, in the mornynge, the archebyssshop of Yorke, beyng with kynge Henry in London, to the intent to moue peoples hartes towarde kynge Henry, rode with hym and shewed kynge Henry to the people, whiche rather drewe mennes hartes from hym than otherwyse. And the same Shere Thursday, at after none, kynge Edward came into London, and was receyued in the cite, and so rode into Poules, and there, in the bysshoppes paleyse, he founde kynge Henry, with fewe persons about hym, for all suche lordes and other as were about kynge Henry, whan they harde of kynge Edwardes commynge they fled, and euery ^{Kyng Hē-} man was fayne to shyfte for hym selfe. And than kynge Edward ^{ry taken at} toke kynge Henry there, and put hym in safe kepyng. And than ^{the bysshops} ^{paleise.}

Battel at
Barnet.

he harde tell of the cōmyng of the duke of Clarence, his brother, and of the erle of Warwyke, the lorde Mountegue, and other lordes, with a great power, towarde London; wherfore kynge Edward toke kynge Henry with hym and departed with his hoost, and, vpon Eester eyn, came to Barnet. But the duke of Clarence, his brother, sodaynly agayne forsoke the erle of Warwykes parte, and, with the strengthe that he had, he came to his brother, kynge Edward; wherfore the erle of Warwyke, and the other lordes, were somewhat dismayde; but, by the excytyng of the markes Mountegue, and the erle of Oxforde, they kept on theyr iourney, where on the morowe, beyng Eester day in the mornynge, bothe the hoostes mette on the playne beyonde Barnet; and the erle of Oxforde, hauynge the vawewarde, quytte hym so well that he bare ouer that parte of the fylde whiche he set vpon, and beate them backe vpon that parte nexte Enuyld chase, that tydynges came to London that kynge Edward had lost the fylde. But, in conclusyon, kynge Edward beyng nyghe the towne of Barnet, gathered his men so together agayne, and set vpon them a fresshe, whyle the erle of Oxforde was folowynge his chase, that, in conclusyon, he wanne the fylde, and slewe there, of his enemyes, the lorde markes Mountegue, the erle of Warwyke, with many other. And, vpon kynge Edwardes parte was slayne the lorde Barnes; and of the cōmons vpon bothe partes, .xv.C. men and moo. And than the duke of Excester and the erle of Oxforde fled, and escaped with great daunger; and, the same after none, kynge Edward came into London agayne, and brought kynge Henry with hym, rydynge in a longe gowne of blewe veluet thorowe London, and so to Westmyster, and from thens sent hym vnto the Towre, where he remayned as prisoner all his lyfe tyme after.

¶ Kynge Edward than beyng in possessyon agayne of the hole realme, made prouisyon to withstande the landynge of quene Margaret and Edward her son, whiche all this whyle lay at the see syde in Fraūce, taryenge for wynde, and, at the last, landed with a strength of Frenchemen. And, after that landynge, dyuers other re-

sorted to them; and, at the last, at a place besyde Tewkysburye, the .iiii. day of May, kyng Edwarde, with a great power, met with them, where betwene them was fought a cruell battell, but kynge Edwarde had the victorye. Where the sayde quene Marget was taken prisoner, and prince Edwarde, her son, taken, and immedyatly he was brought to kynge Edwarde; where, whan kynge Edwarde questioned with hym, and, because he answered hym sharpely and contrarye to his pleasure, therfore kynge Edwarde sodaynly smote hym on the face with his gauntlet; vpon the whiche stroke so receyued, his seruantes sodaynly fell vpon hym and slewe hym out of hande. And than, anone after this, kynge Edwarde sent quene Marget to London. And, at the last, she was sent home to her contrey.

¶ Also after this, the bastarde Fauconbryge, with certayne ryotous maryners, and dyuers ryotous persons of Kent and Essex, came in great multytude to the citeye of London, and assauted the gates; but the citezynes with strengthe droue them backe, and chased them to theyr shyppes at Blacke-wall, as farre as Stretforde and Detforde, in Kent, and slewe many of them, and toke many prisoners.

¶ Also, vpon Ascencyon euyng nexte folowyng, the deed corps of kynge Henry the Syxte, late kynge, was brought from the Towre of London, thorowe the citeye, and so to Poules church, and there lafte all nyght. But howe this prince dyed, there be dyuers opinyons; but the moost cōmyn tale was, that he was stycked with a dagger, by the handes of Rycharde, duke of Glocester, kynge Edwardes brother.

¶ Also, sone after that, kynge Edwarde, with a strength of people, went into Kent, and there caused his justyce to syt vpon the ryotours that came with the bastarde Fauconbrydge; and dyuers were put to executyon, as well in Kent as in Essex. And after, the sayd bastarde, about Southamton, was taken, and there beheded, and his hede sent to London, and set vpon London brydge.

¶ Also, in the .xii. yere of his reyne, kynge Edwarde called a parlyament at Westmyster, where there was graunted to hym an ayde for the great charge that he had in his warres. And in the nexte yere after, the deed corps of the duke of Exceter was founden drowned, but howe he was drowned no man can tell.

Voyage into
Fraunce.

¶ Also, in the .xiii. yere of kynge Edwarde, he intendynge to make warre agaynst Lewys, the Frenche kynge, requyred an ayde of his lordes spirituall and temporall, and other ryche men within the realme, whiche they graunted to hym, and was called a benyuolence. After the gatherynge wherof, the nexte yere after, the kyng, with a great armye, sayled vnto Caley, and so forth went into Fraunce; agaynst whome y Frenche kynge assembled a great power. But whan bothe hoostes shulde haue met, certayne offers of peace was made, and a day appoynted where bothe kynges dyd mete at a place called Pynyake; where vpon a brydge ouer a ryuer there was made a particyon in the myddes therof, that nother of them myght enter to other, but with a lope, that eyther prince myght take other by the hande, and eyther of theyr hoostes standyng by them in good aray. Where a peace was concluded betwene them for .vii. yeres, and agreed that kinge Lewys shulde pay to kynge Edwarde .xv.M.li'. in hande, and .x.M.li'. euery yere after duryng .vi. yeres; whiche thyng, parfytely fynysshed and assured, kynge Edwarde returned agayne into Englande.

¶ Also, in the .xvi. yere of kynge Edwarde, by the great excytynge of one Rafe Josselyn, draper, than mayre of Lōdon, London walle was newe made, also from Crepylgate to Bysshoppes gate, whiche was a wonderfull worke to be fynysshed in one yere.

¶ Also, in the .xvii. yere of this kynge, George, the duke of Clarence, yonger brother to kynge Edwarde, beyng prisoner in the Towre, was put to dethe, and, as it was sayd, there drowned in a barell of Malmesey.

¶ Also, in the .xviii. yere of this kynge, there was a great dethe in London, and thorowe out all the lande. And after that, there was great quyettesse and peace within the realme, vnto the .xxiii. yere of this kynge; in ſ̄ whiche yere, the .ix. day of Aprell, the yere of Chryst .M.CCCC.lxxxiii. at Westmyster, the kynge dyed, and is buried at Wyndesore.

1890

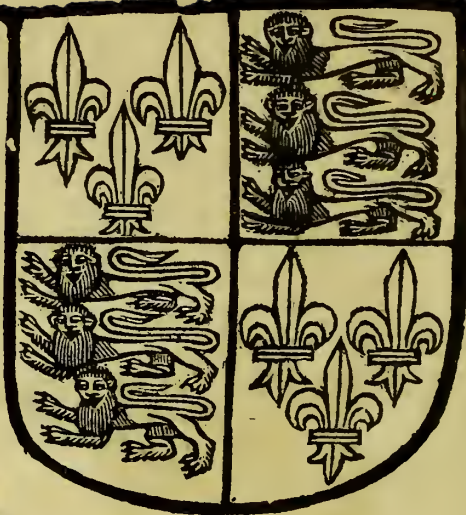
1890

1890

1890



Edwardus. v.



Edwarde the ffyfte.



EDWARDE, the .v. of that name, and eldyst son to Edwarde the .iiii. of the age of .xiii. yere, began his reygne ouer the realme of Englande, the .ix. day of Aprill, the yere of Chryst .M.CCCC.lxxxiii. ¶ But anone as kynge Edwarde the .iiii. was dede, the lorde markes Dorset, brother to the quene, hauynge the rule of this yonge kynge in the marches of Wales, conueyed hym towarde London. But Rycharde, duke of Glocester, brother to kynge Edwarde, whome, as it was sayd, kynge Edwarde, in his dethe bedde, had named to be protectour, met with the kynge, with a great companye of northermen, at Stonystretforde, and discharged the markes of the rule of the kynge, and so from thens, accompanied with the duke of Buckyngham, conueyed this yonge kynge vnto London. But the quene Elysabeth, fearynge the sequele of this matter, toke her yonger son, the duke of Yorke, with her, and went into the sentwarye of Westmyster. But whan y duke of Glocester came vnto London, he sent the archebysshop of Yorke to the quene, whiche so inuegelyd the quene with fayre promyses, that she delyuered her yonger son. And than the duke of Glocester caused bothe the yonge kynge and his brother to be brought into the Towre of London. And in this whyle, the duke of Glocester beyng protectour, caused the lorde Skales, brother to the quene, and the lorde Rycharde, the quenes son, syr Rycharde Haut, and syr Thomas Vaughan, to be beheded at Powmefret, more of wyll than by iustyce.

¶ And, sone after that, the said duke, protectour, sodaynly toke the lorde Hastynges, beyng in the Towre, and incontynent without iugement, or long tyme of confessyon, caused his hede to be smytten of vpon a tymber log within the Towre; and than put suche lordes in prison as

he thought wolde resyst his yuell purpose. And, after that, caused one doctour Shawe to preche at Poules crosse; whiche, in his sermon, shewed that the chylderne of kynge Edwarde the .iiii. were nat legyttymate, nor ryghtfull inheretours to the crowne, with many sclaunderous wordes, to the great abusyon of all the audyence, except a fewe that faouered the protectour.

¶ And after that, at the Guylde hall, the duke of Buckyngham, in a longe oracyon there by hym made, and exortacyon, with elygant wordes, preferred the tyle of the said protectour of the realme. And, duryng this whyle, the sayd protectour, by the counsell of the duke of Buckyngham, as it was sayd, caused this yonge kynge and his brother to be conueyed to warde; whiche were neuer after sene, but there put to dethe.

Kyng Ed.
warde the
.v. and his
brother put
to dethe.

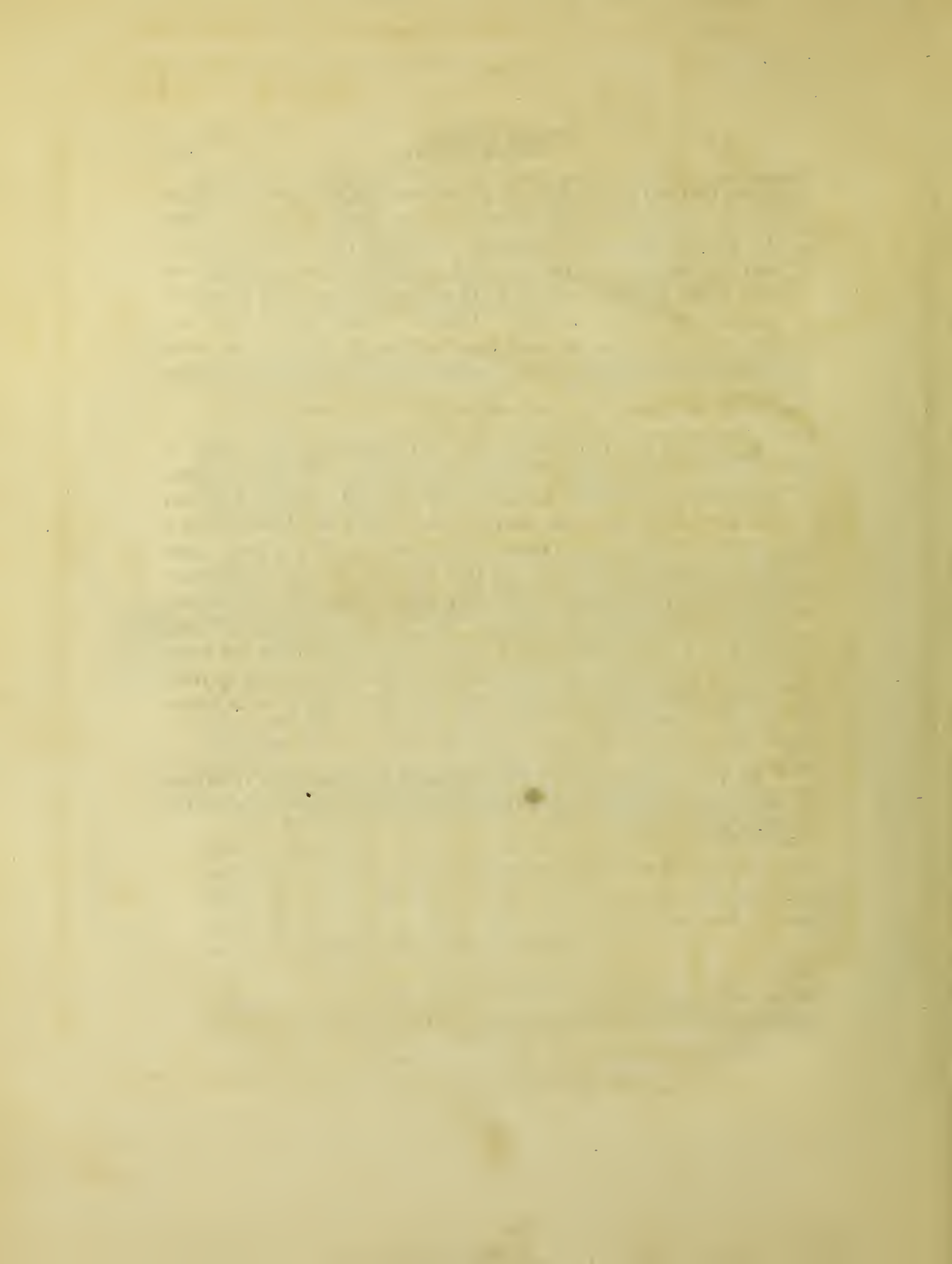
¶ But of the maner of the dethe of this yonge kynge, and of his brother, there were dyuers opinyons; but the most cōmyn opinyon was, that they were smolderyd betwene two fetherbeddes, and that, in the doynge, the yonger brother escaped from vnder the fetherbeddes, and crept vnder the bedstede, and there lay naked a whyle, tyll that they had smolderyd the yonge kyng so that he was surely dede; and, after ŷ, one of them toke his brother from vnder the bedstede, and hylde his face downe to the grounde with his one hande, and with the other hande cut his throte bolle a sonder with a dagger. It is a meruayle that any man coude haue so harde a harte to do so cruell a dede, saue onely that necessity compelled them, for they were so charged by the duke, the protectour, that if they shewed nat to hym the bodyes of bothe those chylderne dede, on the morowe after they were so cōmaunded, that than they them selfe shulde be put to dethe. Wherefore they that were so cōmaunded to do it, were compelled to fullfyll the protectours wyll.

¶ And after that, the bodyes of these .ii. chylderne, as the opinyon ranne, were bothe closed in a great heuy cheste, and, by the meanes

of one that was secrete with the protectour, they were put in a shyppe goynge to Flaunders ; and, whan the shyppe was in the blacke depes, this man threwe bothe those dede bodyes, so closed in the cheste, ouer the hatches into the see ; and yet none of the maryners, nor none in the shyppe, saue onely the sayd man, wyst what thynges it was that was there so inclosed. Whiche sayenge dyuers men coniectured to be trewe, because that the bones of the sayd chylderne coude neuer be founde buryed, nother in the Towre nor in no nother place.

¶ Another opinyon there is, that they whiche had the charge to put them to dethe, caused one to crye sodaynly, ‘ Treason, treason.’ Wherwith the chylderne beyng a ferde, desyred to knowe what was best for them to do. And than they bad them hyde them selfe in a great cheste, that no man shulde fynde them, and if any body came into the chambre they wolde say they were nat there. And accordynge as they counsellyd them, they crepte bothe into the cheste, whiche, anone after, they locked. And than anone they buryed that cheste in a great pytte vnder a steyre, which they before had made therfore, and anone cast erthe theron, and so buryed them quycke. Whiche cheste was after caste into the blacke depes, as is before sayde.

¶ Than, the .xx. day of June, the sayd protectour toke vpon hym as kynge of the realme, proclaymyng hym selfe kynge Rycharde the Thyrd.





1520



Richardus III.



Rycharde the .iii.



RICHARDE, the thyrde of that name, yongest son to Rycharde, late duke of Yorke, and yongest brother to kynge Edwarde the .iiii. late kynge, was crowned at Westmyster the .vi. day of Julye, in the yere of Chryst .M.CCCC.lxxxiii. Immediately after his coronacyon, the grudge, aswell of the lordes as of the cōmons, greatly increasyd agaynste hym, because the cōmyn fame went that he had secretely murderyd the .ii. sons of his brother, kynge Edwarde the .iiii. in the Towre London. Whiche grudge the duke of Buckyngham perceyuyng, and to the intent to clere hym selfe, and to wyne the fauour of the people, conspyred agaynst kynge Rycharde; and alyed hym selfe with dyuers gentylmen, to brynge his purpose about. But yet this kynge Rycharde had knowlege of his intent; wherfore kynge Rycharde, in all hast, sent for to take hym; and the duke, nat yet beyng accompanied able to resyst, fled secretly vnto a seruantes place of his, called Banester. And whan the kynge harde of his flyenge, he made open proclamacyon, that who so euer wolde take the duke shulde haue a .M. li'. for his labour, and an hundred pounce of lande to hym and his heyres. Wherfore the sayd Banester, whether it was for feare of his lyfe, or for the sayd rewarde, he shewed the sheryffe of the shyre where the duke was, whiche incontynent came and toke the duke, and brought hym to Salysburye, where the kynge than lay. But the kynge in no wyse wolde speke with the duke, but a none caused hym to be beheded. Wherfore suche gentylmen as had appoynted to eyde the duke fled, some to sentwary places, and some be yonde the see. But yet, dyuers of them were taken, and after put to dethe.

Duke of
Buckyng-
ham behed-
ed.

Also, in the .ii. yere of kynge Rycharde, dyuers and many gen-

tylmen went ouer the see, vnto ÿ erle of Rychemonde, than beynge in Fraunce, and couenaunted with hym, that yf he wolde marye Elysabeth, the eldyst doughter to kynge Edwarde the .iiii. that than they wolde cyde hym to be kynge of Englande. Amonge whiche gentylmen, one syr Thomas Blunt, keper of the castell of Guynes, was one whiche conueyed with hym the erle of Oxforde, whiche longe before had be prisoner in the sayd castell. Vpon whiche agreement thus concluded, prouicyon was made for the landyng of the erle of Rychemonde in Englande, whiche toke shyppe, and, with a small cōpanye of Frenchemen and Englysshe men, nat passyng in all the nombre of .iii.M. persons, in the .iii. yere of the reyne of kynge Rycharde, landed at Mylforde Hauyn, nyghe Penbroke, in Wales, where the sayd erle of Rychemonde was borne. At whose landyng dyuers gentylmen of the contrey resorted. Whiche erle than proclaymed hym selfe, as he went, kynge Henry the .vii. kynge of Englande, and so passed forthe his iurney, tyll he came to Shrowysbury; to whome euer styll many lordes and gentylmen resorted, as the erle of Darby, syr Wyllyam Stanley, his brother, and dyuers many other. In all this whyle, because that kynge Rycharde feared but lyttell, he made but slowe prouisyon for the gatheryng of his people. Wherefore the sayd erle kept styll his iurney, tyll he came into a towne nyghe Leyceter, called Bosworthe, where kynge Rycharde mette hym wth a great hoost, the .xxii. day of August, the yere of Chryst .M.CCCC.lxxxv. whiche were nat all sure to hym, for some stode styll, and loked vpon the felde, and wolde nat fyght tyll they sawe to whiche partye the victorye fell. But, in conclusyon, at ÿ last there betwene them was fought a cruell battell, where kynge Rycharde lost the fylde, and was there hym selfe slayne, and also the duke of Northfolke, and one Brakynbury, leutenant of the Towre, and many other, were there slayne, and the erle of Surrey, son to the sayd duke of Northfolke, and dyuers other, taken prisoners. Than, after this felde so wonne, the dede corps of Rycharde, late kynge, was layde vnreuerently naked ouerwhart a hors backe, and

The erle of
Ryche-
mond lād-
ed.

Battel at
Bosworth.

so the same day caryed vnto the freres at Leyceter, where, after a season y he had leyne there, that all men myght se hym, he was there, with lyttell reuerence, buryed. And thus this prince ended with myserye, whiche the most parte of his lyfe lyued and reyned by rygour and tyrannye.

FINIS.

HARDING AND WRIGHT, PRINTERS,
ST. JOHN'S SQUARE, LONDON.

4

